PENNINGTON
SON
RS &
BOOKSELLERS.
ADELPHIA

A METEREOLOGICAL TABLE of a VOYAGE towards the NORTH POLE;

Constructed from daily Observations of the Thermometer and Barometer graduated by RHINLAND, and including the Variations of the Needle, the Temperature of the Air, and the State of the Weather and Winds, with the Longitude and Latitude of the Places in which the Observations were made.

April	Thermometer. — o ×	State of the Atmosphere.	State of the Wind.	Force of the Wind.	Lat. Lon. Variations. East.	Barometer. — 28 inches 9 lines ×
16	- - - 10 - -	ferene - -	- - E. S. E. -	- - fine breeze - -	53° 6′ - - - - - 55° 0 - 31′	18° Variat. N. W.
17	- - - 8 - -	overcaft - - rain	- - S. - -	- - faint - -		
18	- - - 7 - -	haze - - - rain	S. - - - - W.	calm - a little freth	56° 32′ 0 Weft.	
19	- - - 11 - -	- - fine funfhine	- - - S. W. - -	- - faint - -	57° 31′ 21′	
20	- - - 7½ - -	rain - - - - fun	S. S. W. - - S. W.	- tolerably freth -	58° 5 55	
21	- - - 6½ - -	- - overcaft - -	- - S. S W. -	freth - - very freth	61° 14′ 1° 49′	
22	- 7 - 9 - -	- - fine - overcaft	- - - W. - -	- - freth - - -	63° 57′ 1° 59′ 19° Varia'on	
23	- 4 - 5½ - -	- - overcaft - fnow	S. W. - N. W. - N.	freth - - nearly calm	66° 27′ 1° 48′	
24	- 4 - 5 - -	- - overcaft - -	N. - - - - E.	nearly calm - - gentle	67° 26 54′	
25	- 4 - 1 - -	fun - - - - fnow	E. - - - - N. E.	- almoft calm - -		
26	- 4 - 1 - -	fun - - - - fnow	N. - - - - N. W.	- - gentle - -	65° 6′ 1° 53′	
27	- 4 - ½ - -	- rain - - - - fun	S. - S. S. E. - E. N. E.	- fine breeze. -	69° 26′ 1° 26′	
	The above Obfervations were made in an open Chamber.					
28	½ - - - 3 - -	fun - - - - fnow	N. E. - - - E. N. E.	- - freth - - -	72° 49′ 1° 47′	
29	2 - - - ½ - -	- - overcaft - - - fnow	N. - - - N. N. E.	- very gentle - -		
	230 expofed to the Sun, and fheltered from the Wind.					
30	1 - - - - - -	fine - - - - fine	N. - - - - N. W.	- very gentle - -	71° 35′ 12′	
31						

May	Thermometer. — o ×	State of the Atmofphere.	State of the Wind.	Force of the Wind.	Lat. Lon. Variations.	Barometer. — 29 inches ×
1	0 - - - 2 - -	- - obfcure - -	S. - - - - S. E.	- - freth - -	73° 3′ - 15′ Eaft	
2	3 - - - 2½ - -	- - overcaft - -	- - - S. E. - - -	- - freth - -	75° 28′ - 3° 12′ 19° Variation	
	In the ice, 230 expofed to the fun.					
3	2 - - - - - -	- - fine fun - -	- - - E. - - -	gentle breeze	77° 17′ - 2° 12′	28 inches 10 lines
4	1½ - - - - - -	- - overcaft - -	- - - S. E. - -	- - freth - -	78° in fight of Clok Bay	
5	0 - - - 2 - -	overcaft - - hazy	S. S. E. - - S.	- - freth - -		28 9
	200 at 11 o'clock at night.					
6	1 - - - 3 - -	overcaft - - fine fun	S. - - - - S. W.	freth at intervals	140 Variation	28 11
7	- - - - - - -	- - fine fun - -	- - - - - -	- - calm - -	75° 23′ - 4° 10′	29 4
8	0 - - - 2 - -	overcaft - - fnow	S. S. W. - S. W.	½ W. - - gentle - -		29 1½
9	1 - - - 2 - -	- - overcaft - -	S. W. - - - - W.	freth - - - gentle	80° 56′ - 5° - -	28 10 - 27
10	½ - - - 2 - -	- - overcaft - -	S. W. - - - W.	freth - - - calm	140 Variation	
					80° 38′ - 40 25′ -	28 11
11	1½ - - - - - -	- - fun - - - -	- - - - S.	- - faint - -		
12	1 - - - - - -	- - overcaft - -	N. N. W. - W. N. W.	very gentle - -		28 9
13	1½ - - - - - -	overcaft - - fnow	W. - - - - S. W.	freth breeze - -	80° 25′ - - - - -	28 10 ¼
				gentle - - -	Cap du Diable.	
14	1 - - - - - -	- - overcaft - -	S. - - - S. S. W.	- - - freth - - -	81° 0 - 6° 20′ -	28 11
				Gelof'd ceilp. Renneveld.		
15	- - - ½ - -	overcaft - - fun	S. - - - - S. W.	freth - - - calm	81° 15′ - 11° - 50 Varia.	
16	- - - 2 - -	overcaft - - fnow	S. - - - S. S. W.	conliderably freth -	81°	
17	3½ - - - - - -	overcaft - obfcure	E. - - - - N. E.	faint - - fine breeze	- - - - - -	28 4
18	7 - - - - - -	overcaft - - fnow	N. N. E. - - -	freth - - - faint	- - - - - -	28 4½
19	7 - - - - - -	overcaft - a little fnow	N. N. E. - - - -	fomewhat freth - faint	- - - - - -	28 6
20	8 - - - - - -	overcaft - - fnow	N. - N. N. W. -	a little freth - gentle	- - - - - -	28 9
21	11 9 - - - - -	overcaft - - fnow	N. - - - N. W. -	gentle - - calm	- - - - - -	28 10½
22	9 - - - - - -	overcaft - - fnow	- - - N. - - -	- - fine breeze - -	- - - - - -	29 3
23	9 - - - - - -	- - overcaft - -	- - - N. - - -	- a little freth - -	- - - - - -	29 3
24	7 - - - - - -	overcaft - lefs obfcure	- - - N. - - -	freth - - breeze	- - - - - -	29 1½
25	6 - - - - - -	overcaft - fnow - fun	N. N. W. - N. W. ½ W.	freth - - breeze	- - - - - -	28 10½ - 29
26	6 - - - - - -	- - overcaft - -	N. N. E. - N. E. ¾ N.	freth - - breeze	- - - - - -	
					Weft.	
27	5 - - - - - -	- - overcaft - -	N. ¼ N. E. - N. E. ½ N.	- - gentle - -	78° 15′ - 0 15′ 20° Variation	
	260 at 6 in the evening.					
28	0 - - - 2 - -	overcaft - fine fun	S E. - - - E.	- - gentle - -	78° 8′ - 25′	- - - - 29 4¼
		coaft of ice in the W.				
29	½ - - - 2 - -	overcaft - caught in the ice	S. S. E. - - S.	- - freth breeze -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 1
30	½ - - - 1½ - -	- - overcaft - -	S S. E. - - - S.	- - gentle - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 4
31	0 - - - 3 - -	overcaft - - haze	S. - N. - N N. W.	- almoft calm. -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 4½

June	Thermometer. — o ×	State of the Atmofphere.	State of the Wind.	Force of the Wind.	Lat. Lon. Variation.	Barometer. — 29 inches ×
1	2 - - - 3 - -	overcaft - - fnow	N. - - - - S. W.	little wind - almoft calm	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 4½
2	1 - - - 2 - -	overcaft - - fun	S. - - - S. W. ½ S.	freth - - - faint	- - - - - -	29
3	1 - - - 1 - -	overcaft - thick hail	- - S. W. ½ S. - -	- - faint - -	78° 15′ - 20′	28 inches 10 ½ lines
4	1 - - - 3 - -	haze - - - rain	- - - S ½ S. W. -	- - faint - -	- - - - - -	28 - 7
5	1 - - - 5 - -	haze - rain - fnow	E. - - - - S. E.	faint - - a little freth	- - - - - -	28 - 5
6	1 - - - 5 - -	overcaft - fight - haze	N. - - - - N. W.	- - faint - -	- - - - - -	28 - 10
7	1 - - - 3 - -	haze - - - - rain	S. ¾ W. - - S. E.	breeze - confid'rably freth	- - - - - -	28 - 11
8	1 - - - 3 - -	- - overcaft - -	- W. - W. N. W.	- - fine breeze - -	- - - - - -	28 - 9
					200 Variation.	
9	1 - - - 2 - -	- - - fun - - -	- - N. N. E. -	freth - - a little freth	78° 2′ - 30′ -	- - - - 29 3
10	1 - - - 2 - -	haze - fun - fnow	- - - variable - -	- - almoft calm - -	78° - 39 15′ -	- - - - 29 2
11	0 - - - 2 - -	haze - fun - fnow	S. E. - - - E. N. E.	- almoft calm - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 2
12	1 - - - 1 - -	- - - overcaft - -	S. W. - - - S. S. W.	freth - - a little freth	- - - - - -	28 - 9
13	1 - - - 2 - -	haze - fun - fnow	- - - - N. - - -	freth - - a little freth	- - - - - -	28 - 9
14	½ - - - 2 - -	haze - fun - fnow	N. - - - - N. E	fine breeze - - gentle	- - - - - -	28 - 10
15	1 - - - 4 - -	- - - overcaft - -	S. W. - - - - S.	gentle - - - breeze	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
16	- ½ - - 4½ - -	haze - - - fleet -	- - - S. - - -	fmall intermitting -	- - - - - -	28 - 10
17	- 2 - - 5 - -	haze - - - fmall rain	- - - S. E. - -	freth - - - fine breeze	- - - - - -	28 - 10
18	1 - - - 3 - -	haze - - - - rain	S. E. - - - S. S. E	very freth - - freth	- - - - - -	28 - 9
19	- ½ - - 2½ - -	rain - - - - haze	- - S. S. W. - -	- - freth - - -	77° 30′ - 6° -	28 - 7
20	- ½ - - 2 - -	haze - - - - rain	- - - S. - - -	freth - - good breeze	- - - - - -	28 - 5
						Variable at - 28 9
21	- 1 - - 3 - -	- - - haze - - -	S. - - - - W.	- - gentle - -	- - - - - -	28 - - 7½
22	- - - - 3 - -	- - - haze - - -	E. - - - - S. E.	- almoft calm - -	77° 15′ - 8′ 30′ 20° Variat.	- - - - 28 10
	260 at 5 o'clock evening.					
23	- 2 - - 3 - -	overcaft - fine fun	- - - S. S. E. -	- - fine wind - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 28 9
24	0 - - - 5 - -	fun - - - haze	S. S. E. - - N. N. W	very gentle - almoft calm	76° 51′ - 9° -	- - - - 28 9
25	- 1 - - 5 - -	- - - haze - - -	- - - - S. S. W.	- - gentle - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 28 9 ½
26	- ½ - - 5 - -	haze - - fine fun	S. S. W. - - W. S. W.	- - gentle - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 28 11
27	0 - - - 5 - -	haze - - - - fun	- - - S. W. - -	gentle - - - breeze	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
28	- ½ - - 3 - -	- - - haze - - -	- - - S. S. E. -	gentle - almoft calm	- - - - - -	- - - - 28 11
29	- 3 - - 5 - -	overcaft - - haze	S. W. - - S. - N. E.	- almoft calm - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 2
30	½ - - - 1½ - -	- - - haze - - -	- - - S. W. - -	- - breeze - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 ½
31						

July	Thermometer. — o ×	State of the Atmofphere.	State of the Wind	Force of the Wind.	Lat. Lon. Variation.	Barometer. — 28 inches 9 lines ×
1	- - 1 - 3 - -	fine - - fine fun	S. W. - - W. S. W.	- - pretty freth -	75° 54′ - 110 -	- - - - 29 inches.
2	- ½ - 3 - -	fine - - fine fun	W. S. W. - - W.	- - breeze - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
	330 at 9 o'clock at night.					
3	- - - 7 - -	fine - - - fine fun	W. - - - W. N. W.	- - gentle - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 ½
4	- - - 3 - -	overcaft - - haze	- - - W. S. W.	- - pretty freth -	- - - - - -	- - - - 28 11
5	- - - 5 - -	fine fun - - haze	E. - - - - S. E.	lively - - gentle	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
6	½ - - - 3 - -	- - haze - - -	- - - S. W.	- - gentle - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
7	- 1 - 3 - -	haze - - fine fun	S. W. - - - W.	gentle - almoft calm	- - - - - -	- - - - 29 ½
					30° Variation	
8	- - - 5 - -	fine - - - fine fun	- - - W. - - -	- - almoft calm -	75° 6′ - 13° -	- - - - 29 ½
9	- 1 - 4 - -	- - - haze - -	S. W. - - S. S. W.	- - lively - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
10	- - - 3 - -	- - - haze - -	N. W. - - N. N. W.	- - lively - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
11	- ½ - 2 - -	- - drizzling rain -	S. W. - - - N. W.	- - gentle - -	74° 40′ - 14° -	- - - - 28 10
12	½ - - - 2 - -	overcaft - - fun	N. - - - - N. E.	lively - - gentle	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
	Without the crouded Ice.					
13	- - 1 - 3 - -	{ overcaft - - fun / clouds }	N. N. W. - N. W.	- - fine breeze -	- - - - - -	- - - - 28 10½
14	- - 1 - 3 - -	overcaft - fnow - rime	N. W. - - W. N. W.	- - lively - - -	- - - - - -	- - - - 29
15	- - 1 - 4 - -	overcaft - fnow - rime	N. W. - - - N. -	fine breeze - -	73° 0	
16	- - 1 ½ - -	clouds - - - fun	N. N. E. - N. ¼ N. E.	- a little freth -	72° 26′ - 90 35′ -	- - - - 28 8
17	- - 1 - 5 - -	overcaft - - fun	E. ¼ N. E. - - N. -	- - gentle - -	72° 56′ - 120 - -	- - - - 28 9
18	- - 2 - 4 - -	very bad - - haze	S. ½ S. E. - S. ½ S. W.	- a fine breeze -	72° 25′ - 90 6′	- - - - 29 1
	Without the ice.					
19	- - 2 - 4 - -	- - - hazy - - -	N. N. E. - - - N. W.	- - gentle - -	71° 25′ - 80 23′	
20	- - 3 - 6 - -	clouds - - - fun	- - - N. E. - - -	gentle - - - calm	70° 15′ - 70	
21	- - 5 - 9 - -	clouds - - - fun	S. W. - - - S. E.	- almoft calm -	69° 55′ - 60 2′	
22	- - 6 - 9 - -	rime - - gloomy	E. S. E. - S. E. ½ S.	freth - - - gentle	68° 31′ - 5°	
23	- - 8 - 10 - -	rime - fun - humid	S. E. - - - S. E.	good breeze - - freth	67° 29′ - 5° 44′	
24	- - 9 - 11 - -	hard - - - rime	S. E. - - - S.	freth - - - gentle	66° 18 - 6°	
25	- - 8 - 12 - -	{ overcaft - fine fun / warm - moift }	S. S. E. - - S.	lively - - - gentle	63° 50′ - 5° 6′	
26	- - 10 - 13 - -	overcaft - fun - rain	E. S. E. - S. S. E. - S.	gentle - - - breeze	63° 25′ - 4° 32′	
27	- - 10 - 13 - -	overcaft - fun - rain	S. W. - N. - S. W. -	- fine breeze - -	64 55′ - 4° 6′	
28	- - 10 - 11 - -	{ ½ overcaft - fqually / ¼ rain - gloomy }	W. S. W. - W. N. W. - W.	- fine breeze - -	64° 15′ - 2° 22′	
29	- - 11 - 14 - -	rain - - fqually	S. - S. S. W. - N. W.	- - very freth - -	63° 29′ - 2° 35′	
30	- - 10 - 12 - -	rain - overcaft - fqually	E. - N. W. - N. W.	- - very freth - -		
	German Ocean.					
31	- - 10 - 14 - -	- - tolerably fine - -	N. W. - - N. N. W.	- - fine breeze - -	60° 1′ - 1° 3′	

The mean Term of the Thermometer is placed at the Top of thefe Obfervations, and is o. The Figures on the Right of o (nothing) indicate the Obfervations to be *Plus*; that is, more than the Mean Term, or above o. Thofe on the Left of the fame Term mark them to be *Minus*; that is, lefs than o, or below Froft.

The mean Term of the Barometer is likewife found at the Top of thefe Obfervations, and is 28 Inches 9 Lines. The Figures on the Right of the Term in like Manner mark the Obfervations *Plus*, that is, above the Mean Term; and thote on the Left mark them *Minus*, or below 28 Inches 9 Lines.

TRAVELS

ROUND THE WORLD,

IN THE YEARS

1767, 1768, 1769, 1770, 1771.

BY

MONSIEUR DE PAGÉS,

CAPTAIN IN THE FRENCH NAVY, KNIGHT OF THE ROYAL AND MILITARY ORDER OF ST. LOUIS, AND CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE ACADEMY OF SCIENCES AT PARIS.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH.

THE SECOND EDITION,

CORRECTED AND ENLARGED.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. MURRAY, No 32, FLEET STREET.

M.DCC.XCIII.

Har
Q42b
P13
1792
v.1

A

LETTER

TO

MONSIEUR LE COMTE DE C.

SIR,

THE favourable opinion you are pleaſed to expreſs of my Travels, ought not, I am afraid, to be attributed to their merit, but ſolely to that zeal for the general intereſts of men, and the encouragement of the public ſervice, by which you are eminently diſtinguiſhed.

It was never my intention to ſubmit to the criticiſm of ſtrangers the faults and imperfections of my ſtyle, which, I confeſs, has often appeared defective to myſelf; and nothing but your authority could have engaged me in the deſign of putting my crude diary in order. Monſ. le Comte de Buffon and you have, unfortunately perhaps, over-ruled my judgement. Your friendſhip, and the very flattering ſuffrage of that excellent genius, ſo juſtly celebrated in the annals of literary fame, for his taſte, for his preciſion, and for that incomparable pencil with which he has traced the Hiſtory of Nature, could not fail to ſeduce me. Neverthleſs, to conſent that my travels ſhall be offered to the peruſal of the public,

muſt

muſt be a very perilous compliance; but ſtill, however unaffectedly diffident of my own compoſitions, and whatever may be their fate in the judgement of the world, I cannot decline yielding to your requeſt. It is unneceſſary to ſay, that I have no pretenſions whatever to the qualities expected in an author; that the buſineſs of active life has afforded me neither time nor opportunity to acquire them; and therefore in the following pages I preſume only to give a ſimple and inartificial deſcription of objects, as they impreſſed themſelves upon my mind. But, Sir, will others ſhow the ſame candour and indulgence with you? Will the public, for the ſake of unadorned truth, pardon the ſtyle of a military

man, who has been long a wanderer in wild and ſavage countries; who ſeeks only to convey his ſentiments to the reader without confuſion; and who, little concerned for the ſtudied ornaments of compoſition, is ambitious of perſpicuity alone? This work is the production neither of a philoſopher, nor of a man verſant in letters; it is the plain relation of a traveller, the friend of man and of nature, who affects not the character of deep ſagacity, but rather that of candid and common obſervation. In conſidering perſons, manners, and things, the natural ſenſibility of my mind frequently gives occaſion to reflections, which I have no doubt muſt claim the reader's indulgence; but if he will conde-

ſcend

ſcend to be my companion in the courſe of long and painful travels, which I undertook in the hope and earneſt deſire of ſerving my country, as well as of gratifying the early and innocent propenſities of my own mind, I am confident the indulgence I ſolicit will not be withheld.

I am ſoon to ſail for France; My health is conſiderably improved, and the continuance of war renders my preſence neceſſary at home. But, in ſpite of the very ſincere pleaſure I have in the proſpect of meeting with my friend, I cannot, though my abſence ſhould only prove temporary, part without extreme regret from my delightful valley of Baradaire. Alas! the

beauty of this climate, and the peaceful rural borders of my river, accord more with my feelings than the noiſy and contentious ſcenes which await me in Europe. It is in the conſtancy and reſources of your friendſhip alone that I can hope to be compenſated for the pleaſures I muſt relinquiſh with my preſent retreat.

I have the honour to be, with ſentiments the moſt ſincere and reſpectful,

SIR,

Your moſt humble,

And moſt obedient ſervant,

PAGÉS.

Baradaire, St. Domingo
10th May 1780.

CON-

CONTENTS.

VOLUME I.

PART I.

A VOYAGE WESTWARD FROM THE COAST OF FRANCE, CROSSING THE ATLANTIC, AMERICA, THE SOUTH SEA, AND THE CHINESE ARCHIPELAGO, TO THE ISLAND OF JAVA.

CHAP. I.

Detail of the Objects to be embraced in the preſent Undertaking—In exploring a North-Weſt Paſſage the Author reſolves to accommodate himſelf to the Cuſtoms and Manners of the Nations through whoſe Territories he muſt neceſſarily paſs—After a Paſſage from Rochfort to St. Domingo, he embarks at that Iſland for New Orleans Page 1

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Arrival at the Entrance of the Miſſiſſippi—Deſcription of that River, and of the Mobille —the Precautions to be obſerved in navigating this perilous Coaſt - - Page 7

CHAP. III.

Navigation up the Miſſiſſippi—Deſcription of the romantic Country ſituated upon its Banks—Cultivation of the Province of Louiſiana—Character, Mode of Life, and Commerce of the Settlers—Particulars reſpecting the indigenous Inhabitants—Deſcription of the City and Harbour of New Orleans - 15

CHAP. IV.

The Author embarks at New Orleans in a trading Canoe—ſeveral French and other Settlements deſcribed—civilized State of the Indians, and their affectionate Attachment to each other - - - 25

CHAP. V.

Deſcription of an Indian Village—Ceremonies obſerved by the Chief in receiving Strangers

gers—Cuſtoms and Purſuits of the Natives —their Courage and Generoſity—farther Particulars reſpecting the Miſſiſſippi—Reflections upon a retired and ſimple Mode of Life - - - - - Page 32

CHAP. VI.

Confluence of the Miſſiſſippi and Red Rivers, which, as well as the Countries that border on them, afford a remarkable Contraſt—Paſſage over three Falls—the Difficulties of the Navigation increaſe—the Author arrives at an Indian Settlement called Nachitoches, which he deſcribes - - - - - 41

CHAP. VII.

The Author quits Nachitoches, and arrives at Adaés, a Spaniſh Settlement, where he is near periſhing with Hunger—Deſcription of the Settlement—Particulars relative to the half-ſavage Spaniards, its Inhabitants—their Dreſs—Character—Occupations—military Equipments—the ſingular Mode in which they are accoutred and mounted for the public Service - - 51

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The Difficulties in encountering a Journey from Adaés to Mexico, almoſt inſurmountable—the Author, reſolving to undertake this Journey, ſets out to the Miſſion of Naquadoch, to join the Suite of the Governor of the Province, who is bound thither—he deſcribes the Country he paſſes through—is politely received by the Governor—but is obliged to return to Adaés for a ſupply of Proviſions - - - Page 60

CHAP. IX.

Sagacity of the Author's Mule in croſſing a River—Trait of Generoſity in the Savage Inhabitants of Naquadoch—the Reflections which ariſe from it—Conſiderations on human Nature in its ſimple and unrefined State - - 79

CHAP. X.

Departure from Naquadoch, where the Author joins a Caravan for Mexico—Habits and Purſuits of the Indian Tribes interiorly ſituated—their dexterous and graceful Manner of riding—ſeveral Rivers with ſtrong Currents are forded, on

one of which Occaſions the Spaniards are obliged to conſtruct a Raft—Deſcription of the Province of Tegas - Page 77

CHAP. XI.

Method of hunting the wild Bull, upon the Fleſh of which the Company regale themſelves—an Attempt made by the Savages to ſteal the Horſes belonging to the Caravans—Arrival at the River Guadaloupe, which is paſſed on Rafts—the Caravan halts at San Antonio, a Spaniſh Settlement—Warfare between the Spaniards and Savage Natives, whoſe Population is here very conſiderable—their Mode of fighting is conducted with great Skill - - - - 87

CHAP. XII.

Deſcription of Fort San Antonio—the Situation of New Mexico has been miſtaken by Geographers—the Spaniſh Settlements in North America not ſo formidable as they have been ſuppoſed—Keenneſs and Sagacity of the Indians—their Mode of catching wild Animals—their Hoſpitality and good Faith—Cruelties practiſed on them by the Spaniards - 98

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Departure from San Antonio—the Caravan is in Danger of being plundered by the Indians—Face of the Country the Author passes through—its Natural History—a Comet is observed—Arrival at Sartille - - - Page 113

CHAP. XIV.

Description of Sartille, a populous Town, belonging both to Spaniards and Indians—whimsical Performance of religious Ceremonies—Bull Fights—Gallantry of the Spaniards—Natural History of the Provinces of New Spain, Parras, and Reyno - - - - 121

CHAP. XV.

The Author quits Sartille, and pursues his Journey towards New Mexico—Vengeance exercised by the Spaniards upon the Indians, after a Revolt of the latter—Reflections upon the Punishment of Exile—politic Conduct of the Spaniards towards the Indians subjected to them 128

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

Arrival at the Gold and Silver Mines of Potoſi—Deſcription of the Town of Potoſi—peculiar Mode of catching wild Animals practiſed by the Inhabitants—the Author quits Potoſi, and paſſes through a rich and luxuriant Country Page 136

CHAP. XVII.

Arrival at the City of San Miguel el Grande, from whence the Author proceeds to the Town of San Juan del Rio—large commodious Villages announce at length his Approach to the Capital, and accordingly he diſcovers from the Heights, the City of Mexico in the Centre of a very extenſive Lake—the City of Mexico and its Environs deſcribed—Cuſtoms and Purſuits of its opulent Inhabitants—annual Commemoration of the Conqueſt of Mexico - - - - - 143

CHAP. XVIII.

Departure from the City of Mexico for Acapulco—the Author is reduced to the Neceſſity of travelling alone, and arrives at the

the Village of Cuernavaca—Trait of Humanity in a poor Indian—Arrival at the Port of Acapulco—its Trade—several Shocks of an Earthquake are felt during the Author's Stay—he embarks in a Galleon bound to the City of Manilla Page 155

CHAP. XIX.

Departure from the Road of Acapulco—confused State of the Galleon, and the motley Crew assembled on Board her—Anchorage near the Island of Guam—Population of this Island—its natural Productions and Animals—Description of the Inhabitants—the Galleon quits her Anchorage—encounters a violent Storm—seeks Shelter in the Road of the Island of Samar—Description of the Champan, an Indian Vessel of a curious Structure - - - - 166

CHAP. XX.

The Author embarks in an Indian Canoe for Manilla—is driven to the Beach of a barren Island to seek Shelter from a Storm—the Dress and Armour of the native Indians described—they exhibit a Sham Fight—he meets with a hospitable Reception from them—Arrival at Lawan—Description of this

this Village, from whence the Author proceeds to Catarman - - Page 179

CHAP. XXI.

The Author is hoſpitably entertained at Catarman—the Coaſt is infeſted by Mooriſh Pirates—Return to Samar—Deſcription of this Iſland—harſh and deſpotic Government of the Jeſuit Miſſionaries 190

CHAP. XXII.

Productions and Natural Hiſtory of Samar, and the other Phillipine Iſlands—various Particulars reſpecting the Inhabitants 202

CHAP. XXIII.

The natural Advantages of Samar are of a very ſuperior Kind—innocent Manners of the Natives—Depredations committed on the Spaniards by the piratical Moors—the Sea-fights of the latter deſcribed—Concluſions drawn from the Languages of the Phillippine Iſlands, and the Manners of the Inhabitants - - - - 215

CHAP. XXIV.

The Galleon ſails for Manilla—Anchors in the Harbour of Cavite—Deſcription of the Country contiguous to Manilla—Shyneſs of the Catholic Miſſionaries in their Conduct towards Strangers—Particulars relative to the native Indians—Chaſtity of the Females—Two remarkable Incidents which characterize the genuine Simplicity of the Natives, by whoſe exemplary Lives the Morals of the Spaniards have been improved - - - Page 224

CHAP. XXV.

Deſcription of the City and Harbour of Manilla—Saint Croix and ſeveral other Towns in the Vicinity deſcribed—Policy of the Chineſe in obtaining a Settlement in the commercial Town of Parian—Character of this enterprizing People—Cautions the Japaneſe obſerve in their commercial Intercourſe with other Nations—Particulars relative to the Inhabitants of the Iſland of Luconia 237

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVI.

Advantages which might result from a Commerce with Luconia and the Bissayan Isles—their natural Productions and those of the Phillippine Isles—Ingenuity of the Native Indians—the Spaniards might cultivate Spices successfully in this Part of their Territories—Talents and Industry of the Natives of the Phillippine Isles—a new Traffic suggested to Spain Page 246

CHAP. XXVIII.

Departure from Manilla for Batavia—Anchorage in Batavia Road—useful Cautions to Navigators—the Dutch hold their India Settlements by a precarious Tenure—Description of Batavia and its Environs 270

CHAP. XXVII.

Disquisitions on foreign Settlements and their political Government—Practicability of forming a perfect Union, in a Colony, amongst People from various Countries—Vigilance of the English in promoting their Commerce—Trade at Manilla - - 257

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

Cuſtoms of the Javaneſe and Malayans—Deſcription of ſeveral Chineſe Temples on the Iſland of Java—religious and civil Rites of the Chineſe—ruinous Policy of the Dutch in the Management of this Settlement - - Page 283

CHAP. XXX.

Military and civil Eſtabliſhments of the Dutch in the Iſland of Java—their political Management in ſubjecting the native Princes—the Conduct of the Spaniards and Dutch, in the Adminiſtration of their diſtant Settlements, conſidered and compared—the Author takes his Paſſage in an Engliſh Veſſel for Bombay - - - - 289

TRAVELS ROUND THE WORLD, BY SEA AND LAND.

PART I.

A VOYAGE WESTWARD FROM THE COAST OF FRANCE, CROSSING THE ATLANTIC, AMERICA, THE SOUTH SEA, AND THE CHINESE ARCHIPELAGO, TO THE ISLAND OF JAVA.

CHAP. I.

Detail of the Objects to be embraced in the present Undertaking—In exploring a North-West Passage the Author resolves to accommodate himself to the Customs and Manners of the Nations through whose Territories he must necessarily pass—After a Passage from Rochfort to St. Domingo, he embarks at that Island for New Orleans.

BEFORE I proceed to the narrative of my Voyage round the World, I have only to observe that, invited by certain cir-

cumſtances relative to my private views, as well as on account of the ſervice of the navy in which I have the honour to be engaged, I conceived the deſign of exploring the Indian ſeas by a weſtern navigation.

It was in the next place my intention, purſuing a courſe towards the north, to traverſe China and Tartary, and, having penetrated as far as the coaſt of Kamtſchatka, to direct my induſtry, in the line of the Ruſſian ſhores, to the diſcovery of a north-weſt paſſage.

To ſtudy the manners and cuſtoms of theſe northern tribes, to aſſume their dreſs and character, and, by attending them in all their expeditions, to move on from one village to another along the ſea-coaſt, were the very ſimple means by which I hoped to accompliſh this laſt part of my plan. I had little doubt of meeting with this great object of nautical inveſtigation ſomewhere on the northern confines of Siberia; or, if the continuity of land ſhould conduct me into the polar regions of America, I ſhould at leaſt have the ſatisfaction to aſcertain the

abſolute impoſſibility of any ſuch communication: but being unable to obtain, as will afterwards be mentioned, letters from the miſſionaries of Luconia to their friends in the Chineſe dominions, I was under the neceſſity of deſiſting from this part of my intended expedition.

I uſed, even from my childhood, to read with lively emotions the relations of travellers who had been engaged in the diſcovery of unknown countries; and at a more mature age, the conqueſts of European nations in the two Indies, and the adventures of the Ruſſians in the northern parts of their vaſt empire, awakened my ambition for ſimilar enterprizes; but above all, an ardent deſire to ſurvey Nature's works in the native charms with which they came from the hand of the Creator, became in me a ſtimulus to action, and obtained entire poſſeſſion of my mind. I was ſtrongly perſuaded that inconſtancy, impatience, and a crowd of idle and artificial wants, incident to men who, from their birth and education, have been excluſively inveſted with the command of every important expedition,

would eaſily account for the little advantage derived to the public from many preceding voyages. Hence I was inclined to infer, that a hardy and laborious manner of life, maintained with fortitude and perſeverance, was the only probable means of rendering the enterprizes of the traveller of ſome benefit to mankind: and, having an opinion that man is originally free from malice, innocent, and inoffenſive, in proportion as he is removed from the arts of a refined and luxurious life; an extreme ſimplicity in my whole conduct and character, however diſliked by the faſtidious taſte of the poliſhed European, promiſed to be my beſt recommendation to rude and uninformed minds. In theſe views, I loſt ſight of every difficulty before me, reflected on the outlines of my plan with all the ardour of enthuſiaſm, and was only ſolicitous for an opportunity of carrying it into effect.

Such was the ſtate of my mind, when, in the year 1766, my duty as an officer called me from Rochfort to the iſland of St. Domingo, concerning which I have nothing to obſerve, ſince that country, as well

as

as the navigation thither, has been long ſufficiently known.

In conformity to theſe rules, by which I hoped to eſcape the miſcarriages of former travellers, I began to inure myſelf to habits of life as ſimple and ſevere as new to my experience; a courſe of diſcipline, however, I will fairly own, rather impoſed by neceſſity than embraced from choice, having neither fortune nor credit ſufficient to enable me to viſit, in the eaſy and convenient manner I could have wiſhed, nations either wholly ſavage, little civilized, or for particular reaſons averſe to ſtrangers. I now haſtened to the accompliſhment of my favourite plan with every degree of alacrity and diſpatch, conſiſtent with the regard I owed to the ſervice; and availing myſelf of an opportunity I might never have found equally propitious to my deſign in any other place than Cape François, I reſolved to depart.

I embarked in a French veſſel bound to New Orleans, relying for ſucceſs in a ſubmiſſion to Providence, on auſtere habits of life, on courage, and on a perſeverance by which I hoped to overcome all toil and

fatigue, and even the hardſhips of bodily labour, when on any occaſion circumſtances might render that expedient. New Orleans had lately been ceded to the Spaniards, but ſtill I was in hopes it might be poſſible to paſs through the country, which lies between the rivers Miſſiſſippi and Rio Grande, or Bravo, which ſeparates the province of Louiſiana from New Spain, and which is inhabited entirely by ſavage tribes. This comprehends an immenſe extent of country; but, undiſmayed by the many difficulties in my way, I determined to purſue the tract I had projected, and to endeavour to enter the province of New Spain by the frontiers of New Mexico.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Arrival at the Entrance of the Miſſiſſippi—Deſcription of that River, and of the Mobille—the Precautions to be obſerved in navigating this perilous Coaſt.

WE ſailed from Cape François the laſt day of June 1767, ſteering for the old channel; and the wind being eaſterly, our courſe was weſt-north-weſt. Keeping more to the north-weſt, we gradually loſt ſight of land, and paſſed north of St. Nicholas' Mole, at the diſtance of eight leagues. Continuing our courſe under the ſame wind, we ſoon obſerved the coaſt of Cuba, ſaw Cape de Mulas, and proceeded in queſt of the iſlands de Palumas, which form, on the ſide of the main, the entrance to the old channel; but in order to make ſure of theſe iſlands, their ſituation being extremely low, we had been at great pains to aſcertain Cape de Mulas; for the continuation of the coaſt of Cuba is not eaſily perceived, and it requires all the ſkill and

addreſs of an intelligent pilot to approach it without danger. We entered the channel with the iſlands of Palumas on the left, and Sandy Iſlands on the ſtarboard ſide. It is here five leagues in breadth, and continues much the ſame for almoſt ſixty leagues. The old channel is formed on the ſide of the ocean by a chain of ſmall iſlands and rocks, which extends to the channel of the Bahamas; and on the ſide of the iſland of Cuba by a reef of rocks and ſand-banks, ſtretching out of ſight from land.

The wind was ſtill at eaſt, with a gentle breeze; and having the advantage of the current, we had the good fortune to clear the channel in the ſpace of four days. It is ſurpriſing, that ſhips which have occaſion to navigate thoſe ſeas expoſe themſelves to a long, and, by reaſon of frequent calms, a tedious voyage ſouth-weſt of Cuba; ſince, by purſuing the old channel, if the maſter be but properly on his guard, all thoſe inconveniences may eaſily be avoided. We now ſtood directly for Matance, an inland mountain, weſtward from a bay of the ſame name, which ſeems to overtop the circumjacent

jacent mountains in the form of a hat, whence it has been named Chapeau de Matance. Having diſcovered Havannah in the iſland of Cuba, we ſtood off the coaſt, and proceeded to inveſtigate the ſoundings of the Turtle Iſlands, ſituated ſouth-weſt from Cape Florida. Sounding in the ſouth-weſt of theſe iſles, where they are not to be perceived on account of their very low ſituation, we had fifty fathoms water, on a bottom of blackiſh ſand, and this they deem the characteriſtic mark of thoſe ſoundings. We veered a little to the weſt, in order to ſtretch acroſs the curvature formed by the gulph of Florida, and immediately loſt them. Here we were detained by calms, and ſaw multitudes of gold fiſhes, uncommonly large, and about five feet in length: they are diſtinguiſhed by a variety of beautiful colours, which glance upon the eye in an entertaining manner. I obſerved, that the force of the current from ſouth to north (a current probably owing to the trade-winds, and the poſition of the neighbouring lands) was ſtrongeſt when the wind blew freſh at north. This appearance I can only explain,

by

by ſuppoſing that the billows, driven by the violence of the north wind againſt a reef of rocks which ſtretches to the eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, rebounding, paſs over their heads, and fall into a calm ſea; when its level being raiſed above that of the ocean, the waters, in recovering their equipoiſe, exhibit this extraordinary phænomenon.

The winds freſhened, and we ſtood away for ſoundings between the river Mobille and the ſouth-eaſt branch of the Miſſiſſippi; and having found forty fathoms on a bottom of black clay, we continued our courſe with the ſame depth of water. It is in this quarter that the navigator inveſtigates the ſound; for being to the north-eaſt of the ſouth and ſouth-eaſt branches, he here edges into the current of the ſouth-eaſt, and ſuffers himſelf to drift with the ſtream, keeping in a depth from twenty-five to thirty fathoms, until he gets in view of a ſea mark. This he may diſcover five leagues off, and the ſhip comes to anchor north-eaſt from it, at the diſtance of two leagues, to avoid the force of the current, as well as the inconvenience of immenſe

trees

trees which are drifted down. The bottom of the Mobille conſiſts of a black clay; that of the ſouth-eaſt branch of the Miſſiſſippi of a whitiſh clay with a ſmall mixture of fine ſand; and that at the ſea mark is likewiſe of a whitiſh clay, but entirely deſtitute of ſand. If, in coming to anchor, the pilot is regardleſs of theſe inſtructions, he will be in danger of drifting out to ſea by the ſouth-eaſt entrance, and by the eaſtern and ſouthern ſtraits of the ſouth or main branch of the river; he would then be carried through the weſtern ſtraits of the ſame ſouthern entrance; when croſſing the third branch, which diſcharges itſelf into the ocean, he would fall in with currents running towards the Bay of St. Bernard; a bay but little known, and, from its frequent ſand banks, and a coaſt generally under water, much dreaded by navigators.

The principal entrance, which, as I have already ſaid, is that of the ſouth, contains various ſtraits or channels ſeparated by ſmall iſlands, which are liable to be covered at high water during the ſpring tides. One of them, ſituated weſt from the ſouthern

ſtrait,

ſtrait, was occupied by the French, who erected a beacon for the convenience of ſuch ſhipping as might have occaſion to anchor on the ſouth coaſt. The Spaniards took poſſeſſion of another lying eaſt from the ſouth-eaſt ſtrait; here they raiſed a battery, and erected a beacon, maintaining ſeveral pilots for the navigation of that channel, which appears to me by far the moſt convenient of the two. The arrival of veſſels being generally from the eaſt, and as the wind is moſt prevalent in the ſame quarter, it is found, that ſailing in a north-weſt direction is more convenient than due north; by the latter route there is, beſides, leſs jeopardy of being drifted into the Bay of St. Bernard. Here are, however, difficulties in both ſtraits; and it is no ſmall diſadvantage to the laſt, that it contains only eighteen feet water in a channel which muſt be navigated with great care againſt a moſt formidable current; we entered this ſtrait with the aſſiſtance of a pilot.

I was extremely ſurpriſed with the beauty of the Miſſiſſippi, whoſe waters, after mixing with the ſea, preſerve their freſhneſs and pale

pale colour two or three leagues from ſhore. The force of the current, ſtill perceptible at that diſtance, carries out to ſea vaſt trees, which have fallen from age, or are undermined by the ſtream, to the moleſtation of ſuch ſhips as happen to come in their way.

In the free and regular courſe of the river, it runs at leaſt two leagues and a half an hour. The water driven to the banks by the great rapidity of the current, acquires a motion different from what is obſerved in the middle. We made it our buſineſs to profit by this circumſtance, by keeping the veſſel in the eddy; but, in ſpite of every precaution, we made little way. The wind, though rather in our favour, was inconſiderable, and we had frequently to contend with currents of extreme rapidity. Our hardſhips were alſo greatly aggravated by vaſt ſwarms of moſquitoes and ſand-flies, the ſtings of which are exquiſitely painful. The low and marſhy banks of the Miſſiſſippi are covered with reeds, which are particularly favourable to the increaſe of theſe inſects; and Nature, one would think, is careful to diverſify their

ſpecies,

ſpecies, with a view to render the ſmart they occaſion to the traveller as various as it is poignant; for I could perceive the ſenſations of pain to differ with the form, ſize, and colour of the fly. The vaſt green ſurface of reeds preſented to the eye, tall and undulating like the waves of the ſea, might have afforded an entertaining proſpect, could we have forgotten to what malicious gueſts they gave ſhelter. The moſt troubleſome ſpecies of theſe inſects during the heat of the ſun is named *frappe d'abord*, a fly which bites the inſtant it alights on the ſkin, with ſuch effect that the blood immediately follows, and hence the origin of its name. The freſh breeze of the evening baniſhes them to the covert of their reeds, but they are ſucceeded by myriads of gnats, which we endeavoured to drive away by kindling a fire, a remedy in uſe among the natives of Louiſiana againſt the ſting and importunity of this intolerable race of inſects.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Navigation up the Miſſiſſippi—Deſcription of the romantic Country ſituated upon its Banks—Cultivation of the Province of Louiſiana—Character, Mode of Life, and Commerce of the Settlers—Particulars reſpecting the indigenous Inhabitants—Deſcription of the City and Harbour of New Orleans.

HAVING ſailed ten leagues farther, we came to the ſeparation of that branch which forms the ſouth-eaſt entrance of the Miſſiſſippi; and here we paſſed an oyſter marſh, in which were ſhells of prodigious ſize, uſed by the inhabitants for the purpoſes of lime-ſtone. The fenny banks of the river afford a retreat to multitudes of moraſs fowl, which, for the ſake of their oil, receive an annual viſit from the induſtrious inhabitants of New Orleans. Fifteen leagues above the entrances of the river we came to the creek Plaquemines, ſo named from a kind of fruit very pleaſant to the taſte. Here the country beginning

to

to riſe above the level of the Miſſiſſippi, the ſcenery becomes truly magnificent. On each bank are trees of wonderful ſize, which, warped in the wild luxuriance of plants and underwoods, form a thick wood impervious to the rays of the ſun. Having made my way with much difficulty into the foreſt, the ſoil, matted with a compoſt of rotten leaves and branches, preſented in ſome places agreeable walks, whilſt frequently we were intercepted by pools of ſtagnant water, or by enormous trunks of trees, which a long ſeries of ages had levelled with the ground. The ſwan and cardinal, natives of theſe woods, are eminently beautiful in their plumage; and the warbling of the laſt is equally ſweet and delicate with that of the fineſt ſongſter in Europe. In the nooks and angles of this river we met with ducks, teals, and other wild fowls, in abundance, nor is its ſtream ſcantily ſupplied in different kinds of large fiſh, ſuch as the barbed and armed fiſh, whoſe ſharp armour frequently admoniſhes the fiſherman to avoid imprudent eagerneſs in ſeizing his prey. The wounds inflicted by

by theſe animals are conſtantly attended with inflammation and ſwelling.

In this little bay of the Miſſiſſippi we were overtaken by a violent ſtorm, which, as we were moored to a tree, ſnapped our cable, and dragged the anchor to the oppoſite ſide. I find it is more common in this navigation to ſecure the veſſels by means of hawſers faſtened on the bank, than by dropping an anchor, which it is extremely difficult to heave up, on account of the large trees that lie ſcattered in the bed of the river.

We now approached houſes and plantations of rice and Indian corn. Rice is ſeldom ſown here but in fields, which being only one or two feet above the level of the the river, admit of canals for the purpoſe of watering them. Indian corn is cultivated over the whole province of Louiſiana, but the crops are no where equally fine and abundant as in this part of the country. The houſes of the inhabitants are tolerably pleaſant, and erected ſeveral feet above the ſurface of the ground, in order to guard againſt the humidity of the ſoil, ſerpents, and other

noxious animals. The floor is conſtructed of ſquare pieces of large timber, dove-tailed and ſupported by ſtrong beams and pillars. The body of the building, reſting on another ſet of pillars, has four façades, with a gallery to each, and contains the family apartments. They conſiſt only of one ſtory, and are covered with thin pieces of cypreſs wood, diſpoſed and fixed on the roof in the manner of European ſlating. Each houſe is bordered by a piece of water, and is placed in the middle of a little plantation about two hundred paces ſquare. The noble trees which once occupied this ſoil have been employed in building and in fencing the plantations; and in order to get rid of the remainder with the leaſt trouble and difficulty, they uſually burn them. In plantations, however, newly incloſed, one ſtill meets with large trunks, which coſt the planter much labour to root out and clear away.

After aſcending eight leagues higher, we came to the *Anſe Angloiſe*, and at the diſtance of five leagues higher, on the 28th July, we dropped anchor oppoſite to New Orleans.

Orleans. This city ſtands about thirty leagues above the entrances of the river, and only one from a lake which communicates with plantations lately ceded to the Engliſh. All the way from three leagues above the creek Plaquemines, the banks are cultivated and populous. The harbour of New Orleans is large and commodious, its population but moderate; the houſes are built of brick, the ſtreets clean and broad, and ſome buildings, particularly thoſe which belong to the king, are extremely handſome. The complexion of the people is fair, thin perſons, robuſt, and their natural character cheerful and manly. The reſident inhabitants conſiſt of the garriſon, and ſuch as hold public employments, merchants, and artiſans of all denominations. The planters, who are attentive to the cultivation of their eſtates, as well as the merchants who live far up the country for the purpoſe of trading with the ſavages, are only ſeen in the capital during the intervals of their induſtry and traffic.

I cannot ſufficiently admire the bold and intrepid character peculiar to the people of

Louiſiana, who, embracing the life of ſavages, aſſume their dreſs, and, for a very ſlender recompence, ſubmit to their moſt laborious occupations. While ſome wander towards the ſea-ſhore in the chace of moraſs fowls, whoſe oil is productive of a ſmall branch of traffic, others ramble four or five hundred leagues into the country to hunt the bear, the deer, and the wild buffalo, and return laden with their ſkins, containing the fleſh and fat in a dried ſtate of preſervation. Some penetrate into the depths of their foreſts in ſearch of the cedar, the cypreſs, and the maple trees, which afford a very profitable trade with the American iſlands. To tranſport the productions of their own ſoil to theſe iſlands, and bring back in exchange different articles of commerce, is the employment of others. Some, laſtly, carry commodities four or five hundred leagues into the country, by an inland navigation, and on theſe occaſions are known to ſubdue with the oar currents of amazing rapidity. On their expeditions by land they live entirely on the game they happen to kill; while

while a looſe ſhirt, and a ſtripe of cloth tied about their loins, ſerve them for cloathing. They travel, however, as much as poſſible by water, and employ canoes, or rather excavated trees, for the purpoſe of conveying themſelves and families to the ſcenes of hunting or traffic. Upon their arrival, a hut, conſiſting of the branches of trees plaiſtered over with mud, being reared for their accommodation, they begin to exerciſe their induſtry, particularly in diſcovering what is called the waxen-tree; from whoſe twigs they contrive to detach that ſubſtance, in the following manner: having cut the ſmall branches in pieces, and placed them in a kind of tub, taking care to leave a certain ſpace between the ſticks and the bottom of the veſſel, they make a warm ley continue to run over them for ſeveral days. Meanwhile, the greaſy particles are inſenſibly ſeparated from the twigs, and falling to the bottom form a ſediment, which cools into a cake of greeniſh wax, fit for the manufacture of candles. Theſe occupations render the inhabitants of Louiſiana a very hardy race, and inure their minds as well

as bodies to thoſe bold and laborious purſuits from which they retire for temporary relaxation to the city of New Orleans.

I was no leſs diſpoſed to relax a little after the ſevere fatigue, which, from my new manner of life in my paſſage from Cape François, I had experienced: for, in order to begin be-times to habituate myſelf to hard labour, I had made it my buſineſs, inexperienced as I was, to perform the duty of a ſailor. At New Orleans I made every inquiry reſpecting the poſſibility of travelling by land to New Spain; and learning that the laſt French ſettlement among the ſavages in the ſouth-weſt, named Nachitoches, was only ſeven leagues diſtant from the firſt Spaniſh poſt, named Adaés, I reſolved to undertake this perilous journey.

Meanwhile, I paſſed my time in admiring the beauty of the country about New Orleans; where I ſaw, for the firſt time in my life, the people we call ſavages: I could diſcover, however, no reaſon for their having received this harſh appellation, except it be that their manners are more ſimple,

and

and their occupations more bold and manly, than ours. One trait of character I have often admired in the ſavage, I mean that phlegmatic ſerenity of mind which never forſakes him in any ſituation, or under any event, adverſe or proſperous. I contemplated, with agreeable ſurprize, the noble ſhapes which grace the perſons of both ſexes; the cheſnut or olive complexion; the muſcles unincumbered with fat, ſtrong, nervous, and elaſtic. And although the face is undoubtedly that part of the human form which is chiefly intereſting, yet I confeſs I had more pleaſure in ſurveying the perſon of the ſavage as a fine model for the ſtatuary in the gracefulneſs of his body and limbs. That bold tendon which runs on each ſide of the ſpinal bone, has, in a ſtate of nature, a very ſtriking effect. The boſom of the female, though not large, is round and elaſtic; and ſhe uſually paints a roſe round the nipple with a particular preparation of gunpowder. In both ſexes the features of the face are heavy, without indicating, however, a ſtupid, or inſenſible expreſſion. The rude ſhort locks of the ſavage

hang careleſſly about his ears, while his forehead is incircled with a chaplet of beads, and his perſon with the ſame gaudy ornament in the form of a ſaſh. The women are particularly fond of this trinket, which they wear in the manner of bracelets on their arms and legs; and I am uncertain whether the European female in all her jewels, or the ſimple Indian decorated with her beads, is moſt vain of her appearance. A piece of deer ſkin tied round the waiſt is a covering in common to both ſexes; but on the female it is longer, and deſcends to the calf of the leg; and when the ſavage is diſpoſed to ſquat on the ground, a poſture to which he is extremely addicted, a large ſkin or blanket defends him from the inclemencies of the weather.

The natives repair to New Orleans in order to purchaſe a luxury, of which, unfortunately for them, we have taught them the abuſe; and give in exchange for this pernicious drug, fruit, fiſh, fowls, and game. I had the curioſity to buy ſome of their fiſh, which I found very coarſely cured, but ſtill ſo as to keep a long time without

without danger of ſpoiling. The external ſurface of the fiſh is ſcorched to a kind of cinder, and the inward ſubſtance, being by this means diſcharged of thoſe juices which accelerate putrefaction, is preſerved to ſupply their future wants.

CHAP. IV.

The Author embarks at New Orleans in a trading Canoe—ſeveral French and other Settlements deſcribed—civilized State of the Indians, and their affectionate Attachment to each other.

DURING the ſhort time I paſſed at New Orleans, which was ſcarcely ſeven days, a merchant equipped a canoe of five oars, in order to trade with the Indians in the neighbourhood of Nachitoches; and, embracing this opportunity of purſuing my travels, I embarked and ſailed the 4th of Auguſt. Our bark was thirty-five feet by

by four, and made to go lightly and ſteadily through the water. She conſiſted of a ſingle tree, her head being a protuberance of wood, which roſe two feet above the hulk in the form of a ſhell half opened. The ſides of the ſhell preſenting their edges to the current, were meant to diſperſe the water at the bottom of the falls, and likewiſe, dividing the ſtream in our aſcent, guarded her againſt the danger of overſetting in the river. We were eight perſons on board; five rowers, of whom two were negroes, and one a Canadian, lately arrived from that country by land; the maſter, the proprietor, and myſelf.

The ſtrength of the current, joined to many other embarraſſments, prevented us from ſailing more than four leagues a-day; drifted trees, which lay entangled in the bed and borders of the river, impeded us much: their poſition is commonly athwart the ſtream, and, forming a kind of barrier, they change the direction and augment the rapidity of the current; a circumſtance which renders the navigation of the river extremely dangerous, as the canoe is in conſtant

conſtant jeopardy of ſticking faſt on the trunk or ſtump of a tree.

On each ſide the river we obſerved excellent crops of indigo and Indian corn, with different kinds of fruit, particularly peaches in abundance. Here agriculture is conducted in a more regular manner, and advances farther into the woods, than we found it lower down on our way to New Orleans. We paſſed ſeveral handſome houſes and gardens, belonging to French planters; and a few leagues farther met with a German colony, who are in every reſpect equal in point of induſtry to the French. We next came to two diſtricts of Acadian refugees, who, being the laſt ſettlers, are neither in eaſy circumſtances, nor have acquired ſuperior ſkill in huſbandry. Theſe little colonies terminate on the left ſide of the river, at a channel which communicates with * lake Ponchartrain; and here

* During the time the French were in poſſeſſion of Fort Manchac on the borders of this canal, the Engliſh, becoming maſters of the Miſſiſſippi by the peace of 1763, erected another on the oppoſite ſide. But as this canal communicates

here end the iſland of New Orleans, formed by the ſea, the Miſſiſſippi, the Channel, lake Ponchartrain, and the river Mobille. The diſtance hence to New Orleans they reckon thirty leagues, a ſpace wholly covered with a border of plantations at ſmall intervals from one another. On the left ſide of the river we came to ſeveral villages of ſavage Indians, named *Choctas* and *Tounicas*, of which were thoſe I had ſeen at New Orleans. On the right bank at ſome diſtance, is the ſeparation of that branch of the Miſſiſſippi which diſcharges itſelf into the ſea towards the ſouth-weſt; we obſerved, likewiſe, ſome habitations in the ſame quarter. Some days after we arrived at a conſiderable French ſettlement, called *Pointe Coupé*, and here tobacco is the only production not found in Louiſiana: the qualities of their ſoil, and the ſtructure

municates with Florida, by means of the Miſſiſſippi and Ponchartrain; and as the Miſſiſſippi, of which they had obtained the free navigation, runs from Canada all along the province of New England, they were enabled to open a trade with the ſavages weſt from thoſe boundaries, and probably began to extend their views to the kingdom of Mexico.

of

of their houſes, are nearly the ſame as in that province; and the inhabitants have the manners of New Orleans, but are leſs civilized. On days of feſtivity they appear decently dreſſed; but in their ordinary habits of hunters they wear only a ſhirt, with a ſlip of cloth to cover their nakedneſs. At home the women wear a ſhort ſingle petticoat, without a ſhift, having their ſhoulders and boſoms completely expoſed. This country is tolerably populous, and lies contiguous to different lakes, which afford to the inhabitants a communication with Aperiouſſas, another French ſettlement farther to the weſtward. A little higher, and on the oppoſite ſide of the river, is a ſavage village, where the natives, like thoſe I met with on the Miſſiſſippi, uſe muſkets and tomahauks, and may be ſaid to retain nothing of the ſavage but the name. In ſummer they cultivate fields of Indian corn; and in winter they follow the chace, the produce of which, after ſupplying their own wants, is ſold to Europeans. They hire themſelves occaſionally as ſervants,

for

for here two of our rowers having fallen ill, were replaced with a couple of ſavages.

The hair of the beard, which in general they are at much pains to pluck out by the roots, is permitted to grow in length the fifth of an inch as an emblem of mourning. I have had occaſion to obſerve in the Philippine iſles the ſame paucity of beard, which I believe to be univerſal among all the natives of hot climates. The ſavages are often ſeen to weep over the graves of their departed relations. The wife of one of the Indians we had taken into the boat being lately deceaſed, his beard was allowed to grow, in teſtimony of his ſorrow; and this poor man engaged in our ſervice for no other reaſon than to withdraw himſelf from the preſence of thoſe objects which conſtantly recalled her to his mind. One day, having gone aſide to mourn over his departed friend, he unexpectedly ſpied his own daughter, about the age of twelve years, ſwimming in the river with her companions. He caught her eye, and inſtantly turned from her; but the young ſavage, who had perceived his affliction, quitting

her amuſement, fell into a fit of melancholy, and retired to the ſolitude of her hut.

Their mode of ſwimming is ſomewhat different from ours. The ſavage throws himſelf into the water, and darting forward with aſtoniſhing force, beats the river with his feet and hands; an exerciſe in which both ſexes are equally expert.

The other ſavage was a young man who had been lately married, and his wife expected the moment of their ſeparation with the utmoſt regret. We were apprehenſive ſhe might prevail upon him to renounce his engagement; and it was not without much art and perſuaſion that we were able to reſtrain him from complying with her entreaties. The promiſe, however, of a blanket for himſelf, and a piece of red cloth for her, caſt the balance in our favour! ſo true it is that ſelf-intereſt early aſſumes the controul of our beſt and moſt ſocial affections. Still, however, he appeared irreſolute; and new reaſons were conſtantly aſſigned for returning to his hut. But perceiving there would be no end to this conflict, I at laſt propoſed to remove the canoe from the

view

view of his dwelling to the oppoſite extremity of the village, and he was no longer averſe from accompanying us.

CHAP. V.

Deſcription of an Indian Village—Ceremonies obſerved by the Chief in receiving Strangers—Cuſtoms and Purſuits of the Natives—their Courage and Generoſity—farther Particulars reſpecting the Miſſiſſippi—Reflections upon a retired and ſimple Mode of Life.

THIS village might conſiſt of ſixty huts, which, like other ſavage habitations, are conſtructed of large trees planted circularly in the ground, and meeting at the top in the ſhape of a cone. The interſtices occaſioned by the round figure of the tree being filled up with leaves and branches, are plaiſtered over with mud, and here the family find ſhelter from the inclemencies of the ſeaſon. In the middle of the floor

is

is placed the fire, whoſe ſmoke makes it eſcape either by the door, or an aperture at the junction of the trees in the top of the hut. Round the area ſtands a kind of bench formed by ſhort portions of trees placed contiguouſly to each other: it is covered with a mat of reeds, and ſerves for a bed.

At the diſtance of three or four paces from the manſion of the chief is a ſecond open hut or gallery, where he enjoys the freſh air, and is ſheltered from the heat of the ſun. This laſt is thatched over with leaves, commonly ſupported by ſix pillars, and is the hall of the aſſembly of the tribe. Here the chiefs ſhow their hoſpitality to ſtrangers, and relax from their cares and fatigues, either by ſleeping, or ſmoking their tomahauks. This piece of native armour is a ſpecies of battle-ax, the handle of which is uſually perforated, and ſerves as a tube to an iron pipe-head fixed on the back of the inſtrument.

As ſoon as a ſtranger is ſeen to approach the village, his arrival is announced by a ſcream from the ſavages who firſt happen to perceive him. The chief and principal men

of the tribe immediately aſſemble, each ſitting before his own hut, and ſend him a deputation of one of their number. We commonly made him a preſent, conſiſting of a bottle of liquor, and were ſure to receive an ample recompence in fruit, fiſh, and fowls. We were next invited to aſſiſt in ſmoking tobacco, mixed with a certain red leaf, which in its ſhape reſembles that of the peach-tree. In ſhort, I was much better received as a ſtranger by thoſe ſavages than I had been by any European I had met with ſince the commencement of my travels.

The men of this nation are tall and well-proportioned, have large full features, without, however, any thing diſguſtingly coarſe in their expreſſion. They pay much deference and reſpect to old age, marry early, and, without being addicted to jealouſy, are extremely affectionate to their wives. Divorce, though permitted, very rarely occurs. The chaſtity obſervable in ſavage nations may be owing, among other cauſes, to the little intercourſe that prevails between the ſexes. War, hunting, and fiſhing, are the conſtant occupations of the men: while the cul-

cultivation of the fields, which conſiſts chiefly in rearing peach-trees, ſowing a little Indian corn, gourds, and melons; cooking fiſh and game; and in tranſporting their baggage, in caſe of a diſtant expedition, are thoſe of the women. In the fine ſeaſon they wear the ſkin of a roe-buck tied round the waiſt, and in winter wrap themſelves in an European blanket, or in the ſkin of the buffalo. This animal has much reſemblance to the ox, with the difference of a bunch or ſwelling on his back, like that of the ſame ſpecies in the Eaſt Indies. The natives have the art of tanning his hide without ſtripping off the hair, which, though fine like ſilk, has the ſpongy quality of wool, and affords an excellent defence againſt the cold. I was ſurpriſed at obſerving the apparently careleſs manner in which a mother is accuſtomed to nurſe her infant. Inſtead of a cradle, ſhe uſes a kind of frame, in which the child is made faſt; but as the upper part of this machine is lower than the ſhoulders, his head is left to hang in a very aukward poſition; and, except occaſionally offering the breaſt, ſhe ſeems to give herſelf

no farther concern about him. In caſes of ſurgical complaints they have recourſe to plants, particularly to the leaf of the ſquine, which they have found to have much efficacy in curing wounds: as to a knowledge in the medical art, they have but ſmall pretenſions; abſtinence in eating, and drinking water, being eſteemed excellent remedies for diſeaſes of every kind.

The natives of theſe parts are laborious, humane, and a brave race of men. Peace and good order ſeem equally eſtabliſhed in their families and villages. Their regular performance of the reciprocal duties of life, of the young towards the aged, of the father towards his children, of the huſband towards his wife; their courteſy to ſtrangers, and the little apprehenſion they entertain of their enemies, gave me a high opinion of their generoſity and courage. In the courſe of different wars, the French as well as the Spaniards have experienced their valour in the field. This nation was juſt returned from an expedition againſt the Engliſh, whom they ſeem to conſider as very reſtleſs and troubleſome neighbours. In their extenſive

tenſive peregrinations during the hunting-ſeaſon they encounter perils and hardſhips which appear almoſt incredible to the effeminate European. Neither the impetuous current of their rivers, nor the ſavage aſperity of a wild and uncultivated ſoil, can reſiſt their unabating ardour for the chace.

We came up with two iſlands, which forming three channels, occaſion much inconvenience to the navigation of the river. But the majeſtic grandeur of the Miſſiſſippi never for a moment eſcaped my attention; which, continuing nearly of the ſame magnitude at this great height, may be properly claſſed with the largeſt and moſt beautiful rivers in the univerſe. Nay, after having aſcended to the vaſt diſtance of eight hundred leagues from the ſea, the change in its dimenſions is ſtill ſo little, that it is impoſſible for the traveller thence to ſuppoſe that he is approaching its ſources. The water of the Miſſiſſippi is the ſweeteſt and moſt palatable I ever taſted; and its lofty banks are fringed with trees, eſpecially cypreſſes, of a prodigious height. The principal rivers which fall into its channel, are

the Red and Black, the Miſſuri and Fair Rivers. It communicates with various lakes beſides thoſe bordering on Canada, whither it is practicable to aſcend in a canoe with little interruption. Our difficulties in contending with the force of the ſtream were always great; but at times happening to fall into the direction of a current particularly ſtrong, we have been kept half an hour tugging at the oar without advancing a couple of yards. In order to prevent the canoe's going adrift, as well as to ſupply the place of our young ſavage, whoſe health had been impaired by change of diet, I was frequently under the neceſſity of performing the duty of a rower; but my labour was amply rewarded by the grandeur of the ſcene every where preſented to the eye. Here the canoe grazed along large tracts of ſand and gravel, on which lay extended trees of enormous ſize, whoſe duſky and mouldering appearance ſhewed their depoſition by the current to be an event of high antiquity. Theſe were ſucceeded by a low and marſhy beach, where the crocodile or alligator crept ſluggiſhly among the reeds,

reeds, an animal equally offenſive to the ſight and ſmell. Riſing ſtill on the ample boſom of the Miſſiſſippi, at leaſt half a mile in breadth, we were preſented on each ſide with ſmooth banks and ſtately cypreſſes, garniſhed in the luxuriance of the *liane*, a plant, which after twiſting round them to a vaſt height, falls dangling to the ground. By means of ſmall openings the eye might pierce into a thick wood, and perceive, under a perpetual ſhade, ſpaces of meadow or moraſs, or the ſoil ſtrewed with the maſſy ruins of the venerable oak. Trees which, judging by their colour and bark, one would have deemed freſh and ſound in their ſubſtance, crumbled into duſt the moment they were ſubmitted to the touch. We now rowed under its more elevated banks, where the ſoil tumbling into the river, diſcovers to the view enormous roots, which announce the ſudden and approaching fall of their impending trunks. Laſtly, the banks undermined by the current, and yielding to the incumbent weight, ſhoot with all their trees into the river, occaſioning an awful noiſe, which is often heard at a great diſ-

tance. In the progreſs of this curious navigation I was fortunate enough, though at a league's diſtance, to hear two of thoſe diſmal convulſions. The craſh, augmented and continued by echoes, propagated in that vaſt foreſt which extends all along the borders of the Miſſiſſippi, excited dreary but ſolemn emotions in my mind.

In our ſlow but perſevering aſcent againſt the current, we paſſed from time to time the houſes and dairies of Engliſh as well as French families, who had relinquiſhed the ſtrife and buſtle of the world, for the quiet retirement of the woods. I am ſatisfied that this propenſity, however ſtrange it may ſeem, is not peculiar to recluſe individuals, but is in common to a great proportion of mankind; for I have ſeen many who had voluntarily withdrawn from the reſtraints of civilized life, and embraced, with the freedom, the habits and purſuits of the Indian; but I have never met with one ſavage who had ſhewn a ſimilar predilection for our cuſtoms and manners: the fact ſeems to be, that his union with ſociety is in all inſtances the effect of education.

tion. Having been allured from the deſert to ſhare in the comforts of a cultivated ſoil, he ſoon finds that his neceſſities are more eaſily as well as more certainly ſupplied; and acquiring wants, which till then he was wholly unacquainted with, he is gradually corrupted from the manly and laborious purſuits of his former life.

CHAP. VI.

Confluence of the Miſſiſſippi and Red Rivers, which, as well as the Countries that border on them, afford a remarkable Contraſt—Paſſage over three Falls—the Difficulties of the Navigation increaſe—the Author arrives at an Indian Settlement called Nachitoches, which he deſcribes.

WE had aſcended from the entrances of the Miſſiſſippi fourſcore leagues, almoſt due north, when we at length arrived at the confluence of Red River; and,

as it deſcends from the weſt, and paſſes in the neighbourhood of Nachitoches, we were here obliged to bid adieu to thoſe noble and intereſting ſcenes. We now, therefore, ſteered into water of a dirty and reddiſh colour, which in taſte, as well as appearance, was greatly inferior to what we had been lately accuſtomed. A mean lazy ſtream, creeping ſilently along a low ſlimy beach, was naturally contraſted with the bold and rapid currents of the Miſſiſſippi. Dwarfiſh woods, compared with the ſtately foreſts we had juſt left behind us, and a ſoil chilled and impoveriſhed by the winter floods, which remain ſeveral months on the adjacent grounds, exhibited all the energies of nature in a tamer mood. Here the roebuck feeds quietly in the meadows, and a flock of wild turkies as large as thoſe of Europe croſſed the river almoſt directly over our heads. We paſſed the *Acor de Mur*, an eminence ſo named from its riſing to a peak in the middle of a circumjacent plain; and being, by reaſon of the annual floods, the only habitable ſpot in thoſe regions, may be regarded as the key to Red River. Rowing acroſs the

the mouth of Black River, which deſcends from the north-weſt, the country became higher, and our proſpects more lively and intereſting. We ſaw ſeveral bears, and I was told the banks were infeſted by a ſpecies of tiger. On this part of Red River I made a viſit to an old French officer, who had retired to the ſolitude of thoſe woods with his wife and a few negro ſlaves, where he cultivates a piece of ground, and takes care of his cattle.

Having now navigated Red River for ſeveral days, we came to the bottom of a fall, about eight feet high, in the vicinity of which are a number of French families, who intermarry with the ſavages. We found it neceſſary to unload, and hired a Frenchman to pilot the canoe, which, with the aſſiſtance of ſavages from the adjacent country, we propoſed to pull up a declivity formed by the friction of the water on the bed of the river. The pilot remained in the boat, while we, taking our ſtations at two ropes on the top of the fall, hauled it towards us in the direction my countryman thought proper to give it. We then re-loaded our canoe,

and

and continued our navigation; but had ſcarcely proceeded two leagues when we met with a ſimilar interruption, and were obliged to repeat the ſame vexatious taſk. We were now only twenty leagues from Nachitoches, but the moſt difficult part of our expedition was ſtill before us. Two of our rowers had fallen ſick, and we were all under the neceſſity, without diſtinction, of tugging at the oar; a toil the moſt cruelly ſevere I had ever experienced. This, however, was not our only hardſhip, for, as we repoſed during the night on a moiſt and muddy bank, a prey to vermin, and within the reach of the alligator, it cannot be ſuppoſed that our ſleep was of a nature to afford us much refreſhment. The alligator is ſo extremely familiar that he uſed to come on ſhore even in the day-time, to devour what remained of our meals. The coarſe ruſticity of my negro and ſavage companions was likewiſe extremely diſguſting.

Three days afterwards we were ſtopped at the bottom of a third fall, above which we met with a large ſheet of water, very properly named Muddy Lake. Our pilot, who

who had accompanied us from the firſt fall, conducted us over it. Here the river, it would ſeem, had once a different courſe from the preſent, for it diſperſes and loſes itſelf with little current over a ſpace of about three leagues in circumference. We had ſeldom more than half a foot water, on a bottom of deep mud, full of roots and ſtumps of trees, which appear waſting with the lapſe of time on the ſurface of the lake. In order to facilitate our progreſs, we got into the water, and puſhed the canoe before us; but in ſpite of every effort, ſhe ſtruck inceſſantly againſt ſome trunk or root, upon which, at times, ſhe remained ſuſpended, as on an axis. Theſe were very embarraſſing ſituations; from which, after a ſevere ſtruggle to diſengage her, ſcarcely one of us could retire without wounds in his legs and thighs, occaſioned by ſtumps and ſhells concealed under the water.

Having at laſt, however, ſurmounted the difficulties of Muddy Lake, we plied our oars with great diligence till we arrived at a current which, owing to a ſlope in the ground,

ground, and various obſtructions in the bed of the river, was particularly rapid. Our former embarraſſments had been attended with much labour and difficulty, but this preſented imminent danger to our lives; for had the canoe deviated in the ſmalleſt degree from the direct line of the ſtream, we muſt inevitably have gone to the bottom. Happily we eſcaped without the ſlighteſt misfortune, and in two days afterwards, viz. on the ſecond of September, we came to what is regarded as the principal obſtruction to the navigation of Red River; an obſtruction occaſioned by the river's making a ſweep acroſs a vaſt maſs of trees and branches, accumulated in proceſs of time by the drift of the current. We began to conſider whether it might not be practicable to open to ourſelves a paſſage with the axe; but as I ſoon perceived this, at any rate, muſt be a very tedious operation, and as we were now only a ſhort league from Nachitoches, I determined to travel the remainder of the way by land. In this neighbourhood dwells a female Creole, married to a native, in whoſe houſe

houſe we dined, and by whom we were received with much hoſpitality.

The woods begin to be frequented by hunters, and the keepers of cattle ; woods which, being gradually cleared, according to the exigencies of the inhabitants, have, in ſome degree, the open appearance of our own, and gave notice of our being now on the confines of an European ſettlement. We came to an extenſive meadow, interſperſed with ſmall plantations of tobacco and Indian corn; and here I could perceive on an eminence before us a ſquare area, incloſed with large palliſadoes ſtanding cloſe to each other, and driven into the ground. This I learned ſerved as a fort to the ſettlement ; beyond which, and at ſome diſtance, ſtood a number of little wooden houſes, in a ſtrait line, but at large intervals from one another. They might amount, with a few others which appeared ſcattered over the country, to the number of ſeventy, and conſtituted the whole French ſettlement on this part of Red River. The village and fort command an extenſive proſpect on the oppoſite ſide of the river ; a proſpect preſenting a large

large meadow bounded on all ſides by woods, and plentifully ſtocked with cows and horſes.

I lived here with the proprietor of the canoe, but was miſerably accommodated, both in board and lodging. The houſe was ſmall, and dirty in the extreme; and our bread, made of rice mixed with Indian corn, was of the worſt quality. In ſpite of all its inconveniences, I would have preferred to my preſent ſituation my former lodging on the banks of Red River, and the bread of New Orleans, though it too had been much ſpoiled ſince our quitting the Miſſiſſippi. It is difficult for the reader to imagine how much the air on Red River is contaminated by the horrid ſtench which ariſes from the urine and excrement of the alligator. Our biſcuit was ſo impregnated with this abominable effluvia, that it had acquired the nauſeous taſte of rotten muſk; but I ſupported my ſpirits under all theſe hardſhips with the proſpect of making only a ſhort ſtay in this country.

The ſettlement of Nachitoches is computed to be a hundred and forty leagues N. W.

N. W. from New Orleans; it is of ſmall extent, but tolerably populous; and the inhabitants, like thoſe of Louiſiana, are lively, well-formed in their perſons, and inured to fatigue. They often aſcend their rivers with their families to the diſtance of four or five hundred leagues, and ſpend on one of thoſe painful expeditions eighteen, perhaps twenty months.

Hunting the bear is one of their favourite purſuits, but is chiefly practiſed in the winter ſeaſon, when this animal is particularly fat, and in condition to furniſh a large quantity of oil. The nature of the chace is briefly as follows: the bear generally chooſes for his retreat the hollow trunk of an old cypreſs, which he climbs and deſcends into the cavity from above; meanwhile, it is the buſineſs of the hunter, who watches him on his return home, to mount by means of hooks, and ſeat himſelf on a neighbouring tree. Having a gun in one hand, and a firebrand in the other, the moment he diſcovers the hole he darts his torch into the trunk. Frantic with rage and terror, the bear makes a ſpring from his den; but the

hunter, with great dexterity, ſeizes the inſtant he leaps from the tree, and ſhoots him through the head or ſhoulder. The animal drops on the ground, and dies under the repeated wounds he receives from his enemy.

At Nachitoches I was anxious for intelligence reſpecting the firſt Spaniſh ſettlement; and learned with pleaſure that it was about ſeven leagues diſtant, is the reſidence of the governor of Tegas, and is named Adaés or Adaiſſes.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The Author quits Nachitoches, and arrives at Adaés, a Spaniſh Settlement, where he is near periſhing with Hunger—Deſcription of the Settlement—Particulars relative to the half-ſavage Spaniards, its Inhabitants—their Dreſs—Character—Occupations—military Equipments—the ſingular Mode in which they are accoutred and mounted for the public Service.

HAVING ſpent only three days at this poſt, I prepared to ſet out for Adaés, and with this view hired one of the inhabitants for a guide, who was more diſmal in his aſpect, and brutal in his manners, than any Eſquimaux ſavage of the North. He was likewiſe covered with rags, and in every reſpect gave me a moſt unfavourable idea of the Creoles in general of the ſame nation. I alſo hired from him a horſe to tranſport my baggage, which, for my greater convenience in travelling, I packed up in three bear ſkins: one of theſe I intended for my bed; another

was to ſerve me as a covering to an occaſional tent; and the third was meant to defend my baggage from the rain in thoſe uninhabited regions through which I propoſed to paſs.

We quitted Nachitoches in the evening, and purſued our journey the whole night. About the middle of the route we were conſiderably fatigued, and having ſtopped for a few minutes, my guide regaled me with an ounce of bad bread made of Indian corn. As the path was little trodden, lay over an uneven ſurface, was much obſcured by the woods, and frequently obſtructed with large trees which the unſparing ravages of time had thrown in our way, we had infinite difficulty to keep from wandering. It often happened, though I led my horſe by the bridle, owing to the crooked path we were obliged to purſue, that we ſtopped ſhort completely bewildered. About three o'clock in the morning, however, we arrived at the hut of a baptized Indian, who took us kindly under his roof.

Our hoſt being apprehenſive that my goods might be deemed contraband by the Spaniards,

ards, was at pains to conceal them, but reſtored them to me honeſtly afterwards. I went to ſleep in a corner of his houſe, which, by the bye, ſcarcely deſerved that name, for the roof was only ſupported by a ſort of paling, the greateſt part of which had fallen to the ground from negligence and length of time. As ſoon as it was morning, the family, who had ſlept in a bed cloſe by the ſide of mine, ſaluted me, and began to prepare breakfaſt. From our fare, however, it was but too plain that this baptized Indian was far from being in good circumſtances; and, therefore, I gave him his choice of money or linen, in order to buy us proviſions. The latter he thought would be moſt current in their market; but after all, he could find no Indian corn till the following day, and even then a very ſmall quantity. I became immoderately hungry, and urged him much to make farther inquiries; but he contented himſelf with aſſuring me that there was not half a buſhel of Indian corn within the bounds of the ſettlement; and here, for the firſt time in my life, I experienced in an extreme degree the deplorable hardſhips of

real want. I began to entertain ſuſpicions that this ſad ſcarcity of proviſions was partly at leaſt affected, and very diſmal reflections came acroſs my mind. I determined to go into the village, and endeavour to find lodging in a family of greater induſtry, and in an eaſier ſituation of life; and accordingly, quitting my chriſtian ſavage, I found entertainment in the houſe of a non-commiſſioned officer, who, though I cannot ſay he kept a plentiful table, was always provided with a kind of meal for his family. I ſuffered, however, more than once, the ſevere pinchings of hunger, even in the houſe of my new landlord.

The ſettlement of Adaés conſiſts of about forty miſerable houſes, conſtructed with ſtakes driven into the ground. It is ſituated on the declivity of a hill, the top of which, formed into a ſquare, and incloſed with paliſadoes, ſuch as I ſaw at Nachitoches, ſerves as a kind of fortreſs to the village. Theſe forts or redoubts, in the language of the country, are named *preſidio*. The houſes are ſcattered about the weſt ſide of the fort; and a little valley lying in the ſame quarter ſeparates

ſeparates the village from a conſiderable eminence, on which ſtand a church and convent of Franciſcans. A few ſtraggling trees, and a heath overgrown with briars and thickets, and bounded every where by the woods, compoſe the cheerleſs proſpect of the inhabitants.

The ſoil is almoſt entirely deſtitute of water; which unhappy circumſtance, joined to the natural indolence of the people, frequently reduces them to the want of the common neceſſaries of life. The chief means of their ſubſiſtence is Indian corn, which they boil, mixed with quick-lime, by which the huſk is diſſolved to a kind of powder, and the grain conſiderably ſoftened. Having waſhed and bruiſed it on a chocolateſtone, it is formed into a lump of paſte, which they knead with their hands. Of this dough they make a ſort of cake, which is toaſted on a plate of iron laid over the fire. This bread is the native food of the people in New Spain; and, indeed, when theſe thin cakes, or rather wafers, named by the Spaniards *tortillas*, are well baked, they are far from being unpleaſant.

The inhabitants of Adaés, conſiſting of a ſpecies of cavalry, live by an appointment of nearly a piaſter a day; but whether it be owing to the extraordinary expence they incur by importing their cloathing from Mexico, or rather, perhaps, their idle and ſluggiſh diſpoſitions, which oblige them to have even their daily bread from a diſtance, the pay of Spain is ſcarcely equal to a bare ſubſiſtence. The intervals of public ſervice are employed in play, of which they are particularly fond; in relating their exploits in battle, the perils and hardſhips they have encountered in wild and inhoſpitable regions; and on horſeback, in viſiting, and taming their cattle. Their bodies are ſtrong and muſcular, though ſadly broken by ſevere campaigns againſt the ſavages, whom they name, probably in deriſion, *Mecos*; or by the no leſs ruinous conſequences of their youthful debaucheries. They are, in general, obliging, humane, compaſſionate, and brave:—eminently diſtinguiſhed in the exerciſe of hoſpitality, they are known to ſhare, under the immediate preſſure of hunger, their laſt morſel of bread with the firſt

ſtranger

ſtranger who happens to come under their roof. But, on the other hand, they are extremely proud; and, probably owing in a great meaſure to neceſſity, little addicted either to truth or honeſty.

Stealing I have obſerved is common to almoſt all ſavage nations, and ſeems to ariſe from an original impulſe, by which a man is prompted to gratify his wants, without waiting for the deliberate interference of his reaſon. This principle, beſides, is much ſtrengthened by that community of goods which every individual is ready to exerciſe againſt, as well as in the favour of his own intereſt: but this deſcription of mankind have one great advantage over their more civilized brethren, namely, that it is much more eaſy to convince them of their ignorance, and reclaim the latter from their vices.

The half-ſavage Spaniards of this ſettlement are dreſſed in the moſt fantaſtic manner: a ſort of under-waiſtcoat and breeches without a ſeam, but pieced together with buttons of gold and ſilver, and commonly ornamented with lace, ſtockings made of ſkins, and ſhoes whoſe upper-leathers are cut into thongs,

thongs, affording free acceſs to the dirt and duſt as well as to the air, compoſe their ordinary apparel. A large hood and ſhort cloak, adorned round the neck with broad ſtripes of gold lace, ſeem to be conſidered as a full uniform, and are only worn on horſeback. But, in ſpite of all this finery, one often meets the Spaniard without either hat or ſhirt, while his ſumptuous uniform, torn by the briars and thorns of the woods, hangs in a thouſand tatters about his perſon. His heels are uſually armed with a pair of enormous ſpurs about five or ſix inches in length. His armour conſiſts in a helmet of deer ſkin, a carabine, and a long broad ſword. Two little leathern boxes placed before the ſaddle ſerve to hold proviſions for his march. The carabine reſts commonly in the ſtock, but is uſed as a pillar, during night, for a kind of tent, which is reared occaſionally with the Spaniſh hood, in order to protect him from the rain. His ſaddle leathers, neatly dreſſed, and ſtamped with various ornamental deſigns, are garniſhed round the edges with trinkets of ſteel, which, like little bells, are kept perpetually ringing by

by the motion of the horſe. The rider reſts his feet in a couple of ſtirrups at leaſt fifty pounds in weight, compoſed of four maſſy bars of iron arranged in the form of a croſs. To keep the horſeman ſteady in his ſeat, and to conſtrain his limbs to that poſition, which is deemed moſt graceful among the Spaniards, are the chief purpoſes of thoſe ponderous ſtirrups. This mode of riding, however, to a novice, is a pretty ſevere trial to his patience; for, in my ſhort experience of theſe accoutrements, I contracted a ſwelling in my legs, and an almoſt entire diſlocation of my joints. If the horſe is ſtrong enough not to be oppreſſed with their weight, I am uncertain, after all, whether they may not contribute to his eaſe, ſince they form a ſort of balance below to the gravity of the rider on his back. The bits of their bridles, which are of an oblong ſhape, and extremely well adapted to their purpoſe, have a ſtrong reſemblance to thoſe in uſe among the Arabs, who, as every one knows, excel in the art of horſemanſhip all other nations in the world. In ſhort, the half-ſavage Spaniard, with

with all his ſingular extravagance, is an excellent rider, and, when completely equipped and mounted, never failed to revive in my mind the ideas of ancient chivalry.

CHAP. VIII.

The Difficulties in encountering a Journey from Adaés to Mexico, almoſt unſurmountable—the Author, reſolving to undertake this Journey, ſets out to the Miſſion of Naquadoch, to join the Suite of the Governor of the Province, who is bound thither—he deſcribes the Country he paſſes through—is politely received by the Governor—but is obliged to return to Adaés for a Supply of Proviſions.

ACCORDING to my beſt information relative to the road from hence to Mexico, it is a journey of no leſs than five hundred and fifty leagues; and to the ſecond Spaniſh ſettlement two hundred and fifty, by a way difficult to be found, and acroſs rivers,

rivers, many of which are extremely dangerous in their paſſage. I was aſſured, that though at times a ſmall party of two or three ſavages will undertake and accompliſh this expedition, yet, with the incumbrance of baggage, it would be deemed highly imprudent to attempt it with fewer than ten or twelve perſons in company. It was, therefore, with great regret that I ſaw myſelf precluded from entering on this route, otherwiſe than in a kind of caravan; and here I had the proſpect of remaining until I ſhould be joined by a certain number of companions.

Learning, however, that the governor of this province, who had been recalled to Mexico in conſequence of a diſpute between him and his ſucceſſor, was taken ill at the diſtance of fifty leagues, and was then actually living at the reſidence of a miſſionary, in a place called Naquadoch, I reſolved to join him, and wait till the recovery of his health ſhould enable him to continue his journey. In this view I purchaſed a horſe, and agreed to have my effects tranſported by mules belonging to ſoldiers in the governor's

ſuite, who having come hither in queſt of proviſions, were now about to return. The guide I engaged at this place was a very civil, but at bottom a very roguiſh Mexican: he was ſmooth and obliging in his deportment; but before we parted, I had too much reaſon to believe that his own intereſt, in contempt of common honeſty, was the ruling principle of his conduct. As ſoon as we had fairly entered the woods, he took care to looſe my baggage-mule, in order that under the colour of finding him, he might have time, in my abſence, to ſteal a parcel of my linen, which he concealed among the buſhes.

The face of this country is agreeably diverſified with little hilly ridges, which terminate the view over widely-extended plains; whilſt the vallies are interſperſed with meadows, which, probably under water during winter, are covered in the fine ſeaſon with a ſpecies of graſs of a ſurpriſing height. The humid parts of the high grounds abound in timber of different kinds; but the more dry and ſterile produce pines only, though of a wonderful ſize. I was aſtoniſhed to obſerve

a vaſt

a vaſt number of theſe trees lying on the ground, whoſe baſes, in appearance powdered over with ſoot or coal duſt, conveyed the notion of their roots having been conſumed by fire. The ſame ſymptoms were viſible in many which were ſtill ſtanding; and from every indication it would appear, that the pine, becoming black at the root, diſſolves into duſt, whilſt the trunk gradually loſes its balance, and at laſt falls to the ground. I cannot refer this mortality of the firs to putrefaction, ſince the ſoil and climate, as well as the ſubſtance of the tree, are extremely dry; but am rather of opinion, that ſuffering a diſcharge of the vegetable juices, they actually bleed to death. In our progreſs through this country we frequently met with a ſpecies of roe-buck, and a meagre race of wolves, or wild dogs, whoſe barking, however, is very different from that of the ſame ſpecies of animal in Europe.

Though I am perſuaded I gave every one in my ſervice a handſome compenſation for his trouble, conſidering the ſcarcity of money in thoſe parts, yet a kind of idle baſhfulneſs

neſs induced me to ſhare in all the toils and hardſhips of my fellow travellers. I had been accuſtomed, ſince my departure from New Orleans, to ſleep in the open air; but the nights becoming cold, while the days comparatively were extremely hot, I caught a fever thirty leagues from Adaés, which continued all the way to Naquadoch. At every return of my diſorder a giddineſs nearly depriving me of the uſe of my bodily faculties, Providence alone preſerved me twenty times from breaking my neck, in falling from my horſe, or running againſt the branches of trees which project over the path. On theſe occaſions reflection was the only ſenſe I retained, and I knew we were under the neceſſity of reaching a certain rivulet in the evening, in order to find water and paſture for our cattle. We arrived at Naquadoch, and after a little repoſe I recovered my health, and was reſtored to my uſual ſtrength and ſpirits. We had already paſſed a miſſion, named *Aiſſes*, and that, with Naquadoch, are the only habitations on this route. There are in their vicinity ſeveral

veral ſavage villages, which are ſeldom long at peace with the Spaniards.

Upon my arrival, the old governor, whom I have mentioned, received me civilly; but there being a ſcarcity of proviſions in the miſſion, as well as among the neighbouring ſavages, and my propoſed journey being two hundred leagues, through a very wild and uncultivated country, I found myſelf under the neceſſity of returning to Adaés, in order to provide for my future ſubſiſtence.

I uſed every means to find a companion or a guide, but in vain; and was at laſt obliged to depart alone. I travelled till the fall of night, when, laying myſelf down on my bear-ſkins, with my mule tied to a tree, grazing by my ſide, I began to meditate on my preſent ſingular ſituation. I was alone, ſurrounded with darkneſs, in the midſt of woods of unknown extent, and a prey to the firſt monſter or ſavage of the deſert. Often, during this ſhort journey of fifty leagues, had I reaſon to commit myſelf to the great Author of my being, and in many inſtances to admire the viſible exerciſe of his paternal care. I might now be ſaid to lead the life

of a ſavage; for my proviſions, the beſt indeed for the purpoſe of travelling, conſiſted in a piece of fleſh dried in the ſun, and a ſmall quantity of ground Indian corn, named by the Spaniards *pynolé*. This corn, when mixed with water, ſwells to a great bulk, inſomuch that a ſingle handful of it ſuffices amply for one repaſt. The day after my departure from Naquadoch, I found myſelf all of a ſudden in circumſtances of imminent danger: I had begun my march before day, and having the misfortune to loſe myſelf in the woods, I wandered into a beaten path, which led directly to a ſavage village; happily, however, I recognized it through the trees by the round and conical form of their huts; and, in all probability, I owed my eſcape to Providence, and the obſcurity of the morning; for had the ſavages chanced to be awake, preſuming, under the firſt impulſe of ſurprize, that I came as a ſpy or robber, they would undoubtedly have fired upon me.

The ſame day I obſerved a party of natives before me, when that involuntary fear of them entertained by Europeans, which I had

not

not been yet able to overcome, prompted me to ſkulk from the path, with a view to dine, as well as to avoid their company. The moment, however, I alighted from my mule, I was accoſted by a couple of their women, who requeſted I would ſupply them with ſome Indian corn, and I very readily ſhared with them what little I had. But the reader may gueſs my ſurprize, when ſome time after they returned to teſtify their gratitude, by making me a preſent of cakes made of wild fruit. I afterwards fell in with men of the ſame village, from whom I received much kindneſs; they were at great pains to put me in the beſt path, and to inſtruct me what ſtages were moſt convenient for feeding my mule, as well as for my own accommodation.

At night, having again tied my mule to the ſtump of a tree, where the graſs was particularly fine, I ſtretched myſelf on my bear-ſkins, and went to ſleep. About midnight, however, I awaked, as uſual, in order to remove him to new paſture, but, to my great mortification, he was gone. What a diſmal proſpect now opened to my mind! I

had loſt my mule, was in the midſt of an immenſe foreſt, without proviſions, and without arms either to procure ſubſiſtence, or to defend my life againſt an enemy. I caſt a melancholy look at my bear-ſkins and ſaddle, which ſerved me for a bed and pillow; and under the terror of loſing myſelf in the woods, almoſt trembled at the thoughts of venturing forth in ſearch of my companion. Neceſſity, however, at laſt prevailed over my fears; and collecting all my courage and preſence of mind, after conjecturing from the moon's ſituation the direction of the path, I ruſhed into the woods. Luckily I found my mule in the ſpace of half an hour, grazing on the ſloping bank of a rivulet, which afforded him good paſture; but by what means he was to be caught I knew not, and this excited new cauſe of diſquietude. I can ſay truly, that here, as in other trying ſituations, my temper never forſook me; and after various fruitleſs efforts, I at length got hold of him. In this painful interval of ſuſpenſe, I had embraced the reſolution, rather than return to Naquadoch, to continue my journey on foot, or to addreſs

addreſs myſelf to the humanity of the ſavages, who are enemies to the Spaniards, and in the courſe of their hoſtilities are uſed to ramble all over thoſe parts. By ſubſequent experience, however, of the great difficulties which occur in this route, I was convinced that my idea was impracticable, ſince no ſavage who is an entire ſtranger in the country is bold enough to attempt it. I at laſt accompliſhed my journey; and having bought proviſions for my propoſed route, again turned my face towards the miſſion of Naquadoch.

CHAP. IX.

Sagacity of the Author's Mule in croſſing a River—Trait of Generoſity in the Savage Inhabitants of Naquadoch—the Reflections which ariſe from it—Conſiderations on human Nature in its ſimple and unrefined State.

ABOUT noon, on the firſt day of my return, accident or the ſagacity of my mule conducted me with more diſcretion than I could have done myſelf. Having arrived on the banks of a little river, which, the firſt time I paſſed this way, I had croſſed at a ford, it was conſiderably ſwollen by the late rains; but having been deſired to obſerve whether certain ſtones on the verge of the river appeared above water, for my direction, and, thinking I ſaw them, I entered boldly into the channel. Before, however, I had got half way over, my mule, though urged to go on by all the means in my power, refuſed to obey, and at laſt becoming furious, reared and bounced, hurrying

ing me backward to the ſhore. I gave way to the obſtinacy of his nature, but without knowing by what expedient I might extricate myſelf from my preſent danger. Having no alternative, and reflecting that I might poſſibly have miſtaken the paſſage, I led him back to the path, and laying the bridle on his neck, gave him the ſpur, and left him to take his own courſe. I ſoon had reaſon to be ſatisfied with my conduct; for he inſtantly quitted the tract in a new direction, and paſſed the river with eaſe and ſafety to us both.

In a little time afterwards I alighted to take ſome refreſhment, and obſerving ſomething at a diſtance which engaged my attention, I tied my mule to a tree, and left him; but was greatly ſurpriſed on my return to find him rearing and foaming, and to all appearance in a ſtate of phrenzy. His rage, however, was not long a matter of wonder; for I found the poor animal cruelly infeſted with a vaſt ſwarm of bees, which darkened the air over his head. I made haſte to cover my face and hands from their violence, and cutting his halter, pulled him

after me at full ſpeed. The bees aroſe in amazing multitudes, but being unable to keep pace with us, we ſoon eſcaped from their moleſtation. I hoped to aſſuage the pain occaſioned to my mule by the ſtings of theſe inſects, by bathing him in the river; but this remedy not anſwering my expectation, I thought that a plentiful perſpiration, produced by hard riding, might have more effect, and therefore continued my journey to a later hour than uſual.

The governor being much recovered from his late indiſpoſition, began to think of reſuming his march; on this account, with the aſſiſtance of the father miſſionary, I purchaſed a couple of mules for my approaching travels.

Here I met with an inſtance of generoſity in ſavages, which, for the ſake of ſuch Europeans as are apt to ſpeak contemptuouſly of the uncivilized native of America, I ſhall take the liberty to relate. A poor man applied to our little caravan, praying that we might be pleaſed to afford him maintenance and a paſſage to the ſettlement of San Antonio. His petition was deemed unreaſonable

ble by the greater part of the company, and by all rejected; for although I would readily have contributed to his aſſiſtance, yet it was not convenient to render him this ſervice alone. But I will leave the reader to judge of our aſtoniſhment, when we were afterwards informed that the ſavages in the neighbourhood, getting notice of the application, not only found this poor man a horſe and proviſions for the journey, but conducted him to the confines of that ſettlement.

I have had frequent opportunities to obſerve moral diſpoſitions in the men we call ſavages, that would do honour to the moſt civilized European; diſpoſitions whoſe influence on their conduct is only interrupted by the violence of unruly paſſions; but even in ſuch ſituations, the firſt ſallies of his rage having ſoon ſubſided, that equanimity of which the ſavage affords an eminent example reſumes its aſcendancy over his mind. But will it be ſaid, that reaſon, depraved by education and the example of others, ſo often to be met with in civilized nations; or a dark and deſigning policy, which, in obedience

dience to ſober judgement, contrives, executes, or delays the blackeſt villanies, ever enters into the character or conduct of the ſavage? No: in the ſchool of nature he is taught to be generous, compaſſionate, friendly, and grateful; and if occaſionally he falls into irregularities, ſuch as theft, cruelty, or licentiouſneſs, he has been either corrupted by his acquaintance with Europeans, or ſubject to a momentary fervour of blood which precipitates him into thoſe exceſſes. In the province of Louiſiana I obſerved, with concern, that the French had communicated the impurities of their immoral lives to ſeveral families among this ſimple race of men. At Naquadoch a handſome girl, born and educated in the woods, having had the misfortune to loſe her virtue, abandoned her perſon, I will not ſay to any one without diſtinction, but to ſuch as were inclined to make her a trifling preſent. Evil communication, and frequent intercourſe with foreigners, introducing a taſte for luxury and convenience, have ſown the firſt ſeeds of depravity among a people, who otherwiſe might have continued to enjoy the

the happy innocence of their woods. The ruſtic ſimplicity of the ſavage reſtraining his deſires within a narrow compaſs, and diſcouraging the company of ſtrangers, forms the greateſt ſecurity to the purity and integrity of his manners. A cloſe attention to what paſſes among the other animals, which in the original movements of their nature differ little from our own ſpecies, has greatly confirmed me in the truth of this obſervation. Before I diſmiſs theſe ſhort ſtrictures on the character of the ſavage, I muſt add to the liſt of his unfaſhionable virtues a native love of juſtice and fair dealing: as I have often had occaſion to remark, he pays his little debts with all the punctuality his good or bad fortune in hunting may permit. Chaſtity, laſtly, ſeems equally natural to ſimple and undiſciplined minds with any other virtue. One day I accidentally ſtumbled on a couple who had been lately married, as they lay under their bear-ſkins, and ſaw with pleaſure an unaffected baſhfulneſs in the timid bride, beautifully contraſted with manly confidence and ſecurity,

un-

untinged with jealouſy or ſhame, on the part of her huſband.

I now return to my departure from the miſſion of Naquadoch; and, as it would be tedious to relate the many hardſhips which occur to a traveller in thoſe wild and uncultivated regions, it would be equally endleſs to deſcribe the various ſenſations of voluptuous delight, which, in the progreſs of this journey, the perception of ſimple nature, from the aſpect of the country, as well as the manners of the people, excited in my mind.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Departure from Naquadoch, where the Author joins a Caravan for Mexico—Habits and Purſuits of the Indian Tribes interiorly ſituated—their dexterous and graceful Manner of riding—ſeveral Rivers with ſtrong Currents are forded, on one of which occaſions the Spaniards are obliged to conſtruct a Raft—Deſcription of the Province of Tegas.

I WAS now on the point of commencing an arduous and painful journey; and the agreeable proſpect of continuing my travels had effaced the impreſſions of that extreme fatigue both of body and mind which I had experienced ever ſince I left New Orleans. We were ſoon in readineſs; and accordingly, on the 2d of November, we quitted the miſſion of Naquadoch. With the ſoldiers and half-ſavages in the retinue of the governor, our company conſiſted in all of fifteen perſons. We had twenty loaded mules, beſides a reſerve of no leſs than two hundred

mules and horſes. The excellent order obſerved by theſe animals, eſpecially in paſſing bad roads, in which ſituation their diſcipline and inſtinct were moſt conſpicuous, rendered our little caravan an entertaining ſpectacle.

Two days after our departure we had the misfortune to be detained in a meadow on the borders of a large rivulet, by a great fall of rain, which had rendered the ſoil ſo looſe and ſpongy, that our horſes ſunk to their girths in mire. As ſoon as the bottom would permit, we again ſet forward, and paſſed ſeveral ſavage villages, called *Tegas de San Pedro*. This nation appears to be more populous than any I had hitherto met with; and in many reſpects different from the tribes of the Miſſiſſipi and Red River. The latter, for inſtance, ſeldom undertake an expedition but by water; whereas the Tegas, the ſavages of Aiſſes, Adaés, and Naquadoch, living in huts from navigable rivers, have applied themſelves to the rearing of horſes for the purpoſes of conveyance. Here the ſavages cultivate Indian corn in greater quantities, are leſs addicted to hunting,

and

and draw, during winter, a conſiderable part of their ſubſiſtence from different kinds of wild fruits, which they gather in the woods, and knead into cakes. Bleſſed with the advantages of a warmer climate and more grateful ſoil, they receive from the unſolicited bounty of Nature a great proportion of their ſubſiſtence; and hence it probably happens that they are leſs accuſtomed to animal food than the natives of more northern regions.

We found here, that by a late edict of the new governor, the French of Naquadoch had been forbidden to interfere in the traffic of the natives, which, added to the habitually cold and diſobliging conduct of the Spaniards, had prepared the ſavages for hoſtilities; and we therefore thought it expedient to make our ſtay ſhort, and to have as little communication with them as poſſible. Such of them, however, as had lived on good terms with the late governor, choſe to compliment him on his arrival; and were received and diſmiſſed according to every rule of decency and diſcretion. Next day we were joined by a party of them on horſe-

back, who were eager to diſplay with much oſtentation the ſwiftneſs and agility of their horſes, as well as their own ſkill and dexterity in the art of riding; and it is but doing them juſtice to ſay, that the moſt noble and graceful object I have ever ſeen was one of thoſe ſavages mounted and running full ſpeed. His Herculean ſize, his gun leaning over the left arm, and his plaid or blanket floating careleſsly acroſs his naked ſhoulders, and ſtreaming in the wind, formed ſuch an appearance as I could only compare to ſome of the fineſt equeſtrian ſtatues of antiquity. The more elderly among them, of a leſs violent and impetuous character, rode quietly in our company, with their wives or daughters behind them. The women behaved with the greateſt decency, and ſtudied to avoid our too inquiſitive regards by ſitting cloſer to their conductors. It was their intention, I preſume, in this manner to pay their reſpects to their former governor; but I could gueſs, by the ſhortneſs of their viſits, that they were by no means flattered with our attention to their ladies.

In

In eight days more we arrived at Trinity River, which, though it runs with a ſtrong current, and is at leaſt two gun-ſhots in breadth, we were able to ford with little inconvenience. We uſed the precaution, however, to paſs in two columns, having our beaſts of burthen in the middle, and a diviſion of our horſemen on each ſide; that while *this* broke the force of the current, *that* might ſuſtain the weak in the centre, and enable them to reſiſt the preſſure of the ſtream. When the caravan was about to deſcend into the bed of the river, it was curious to obſerve with what inſtinct the mules let themſelves ſlide down on their hinder legs, and by this means preſerved their balance, and conſulted the ſafety of their burthen. We continued our route almoſt due weſt, and our ſavages, being well acquainted with the ſituation of the country, paid little regard to any beaten path: we were therefore conſtantly conducted by the ſhorteſt courſe to the preciſe ſpot we wiſhed to arrive at.

We paſſed the firſt branch of a river named *Bras*; but finding the ſecond impracticable

in the ſame manner, we halted at a part of its courſe, where the current ſhoots from one angular point to another on the oppoſite ſhore. And here we proceeded to the woods, each armed with his ax, and cutting down ſuch trees as were moſt ſuitable to our purpoſe, we launched them into the river, and conſtructed a raft, tied together with the halters of our horſes, and named by the Spaniards *balſas*. It was the buſineſs of two experienced ſwimmers who went before, each with a rope in his teeth, to ſteer the raft, while others on each ſide aſſiſted its progreſs, and kept it ſteady. Our baggage having been in this manner tranſported, or rather ſhot acroſs the ſtream, and our horſes and mules led down to the edge of the water, a bold and powerful ſwimmer plunged into the river, accompanied by a ſavage on horſeback, who, calling to the animals in a language which they underſtood, the whole troop inſtantly followed him. Meanwhile we, who ſtood on the oppoſite bank, were at much pains, by ſhouting and clamour, to attract their notice,

and

and to entice them to that particular ſpot which was found moſt convenient for their landing.

It is difficult to imagine the fatigues and hardſhips we experienced in paſſing the larger rivulets of this country. In order to approach them, as their deep channels are generally ſituated between banks of moraſs, we were frequently under the neceſſity of either covering the quagmire with different ſtrata of earth and faggot, or of opening ourſelves a paſſage with the ſpade. Our baggage, which for the ſake of a dry ſituation had been left conſiderably behind us, was then to be brought up; and in ſhort, the ſame operation being equally indiſpenſable on the other ſide of the rivulet, we ſpent ſeveral days in extricating ourſelves from the embarraſſment of one miſerable little brook. It is difficult to determine which is the moſt painful and laborious undertaking, to combat the ſtrong currents of the Miſſiſſippi, and the falls of Red River; to purſue a route lying acroſs large rivers incumbered with rocks, ſometimes ſhallow and ſometimes of great depth;

or to travel over a deep fenny ſoil, interſected with numberleſs miry rivulets. But the ſtrong features of natural liberty and independence embelliſhed in my eye the horrid aſpect of the ſoil; and the gratification I derived from the rural ſcenes through which we were conſtantly paſſing, was the chief but ſatisfactory reward of all my toils. I will not pretend to deſcribe the impreſſions I received in thoſe ſituations, for nothing leſs than a practical experience can make the reader underſtand the various pleaſing emotions which ſimple and unperverted nature is formed to create in the mind.

In the province of Tegus, and chiefly on the banks of its rivers, grow noble foreſts of oaks and cypreſſes. The eye of the traveller, paſſing into their vacuities, diſcovers in certain trees, wholly or in part fallen to decay, the large but now ruinous productions of a vigorous ſoil. The bald and muſty tops of others ſhew that they owe their only ſupport to the embraces of the liane, a plant which here length of time has almoſt equalled in ſize to what was anciently its ſupport. The ſeeds of aged branches

branches depoſited in the cavities of their decayed trunks, and meeting with a fat compoſt of rotten leaves and twigs, ſhoot luxuriantly from their ſides, affording the agreeable proſpect of a numerous race from the wreck or aſhes of the parent tree. On the confines of an adjacent meadow, nature, as if deſirous to defend her hoary favourites from the ravages of time and the injuries of the weather, had woven them a grey moſſy mantle, which deſcended in feſtoons from the ſummit of their talleſt branches to the ſurface of the ground; a ſubſtance named by the French Barbe d'Eſpagnole.

If our proſpects were obſtructed in the woods, they were proportionally of ample extent in the plains, and ſuggeſted the unreſtrained freedom of their inhabitants. Here the roe-bucks graze in ſuch numbers, that I miſtook them at a diſtance for a company of our horſes broken looſe from their keepers. In the abſence of the little tyrant, man, a ſenſe of ſecurity ſeems to actuate all the different races of animals; a fact viſible in the familiarity with which plover and other of the feathered tribes

perched on the backs of our mules. Perceiving by the ſmoke which aroſe from among the trees, that we were in the vicinity of ſavage habitations, we attended to our march with more circumſpection.

The Spaniards, who conduct themſelves towards the natives with a ſeverity very different from the gentle policy of the French, have obliged them to retire farther towards the north; a treatment which has rendered them extremely inimical to the Spaniſh intereſt in thoſe parts.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Method of hunting the wild Bull, upon the Fleſh of which the Company regale themſelves—an Attempt made by the Savages to ſteal the Horſes belonging to the Caravans—Arrival at the River Guadaloupe, which is paſſed on Rafts—the Caravan halts at San Antonio, a Spaniſh Settlement—Warfare between the Spaniards and Savage Natives, whoſe Population is here very conſiderable—their Mode of fighting is conducted with great Skill.

IN the ſhort intervals of our repoſe, the country, ſince we quitted Red River, afforded us excellent ſport in hunting the roebucks and wild turkies; and in the courſe of our march we ſhot ſeveral bears, whoſe fleſh we found good and palatable.

We met with a ſmall cheſnut, and a ſpecies of nut which I was entirely unacquainted with: in the external coat it bears reſemblance to the nutmeg, but the kernel is equal in ſweetneſs to that of any nut I ever taſted in Europe. I ſaw many plants of the vine in its natural and uncultivated ſtate; but the

fruit in greateſt plenty is the common cheſnut, and a kind of wild medlar. We took care to lay in a large proviſion of onions, in which this country moſt particularly abounds.

We now obſerved the traces of horned cattle, which were originally tame, but having long ſince become wild, roam in large herds all over the plains. The flour of the Indian corn, made according to the country faſhion into a kind of gruel, as well as the entire grain roaſted or boiled, I had always found a very dry and inſipid diet; but now a morſel of fleſh taken from one of theſe animals afforded me a moſt delicious and ſucculent repaſt.

Hunting the wild bull, common to this country, begins with a ſort of feſtivity, and ends in an entertainment, in which one of their carcaſes ſupplies the only ingredient. As ſoon as a herd of cattle was ſeen on the plain, the moſt fleet and active of our cavalry prepared to attack them, and, deſcending in the form of a creſcent, hunted them in all directions. By-and-by, becoming jaded with fatigue, they were ready to

ſink

ſink down under the whip, but the hunters ſtill urging them to flight by their loud cries, drove them at laſt, mingled with the horſes, from the field. Such as were unable to eſcape were ſlaughtered on the ſpot; when their purſuers, having ſupplied themſelves with as much of their fleſh as was deemed ſufficient, abandoned the reſt to the wolves.

But though I preferred animal food to Indian corn, I derived little more benefit from the one than from the other; for my ſtomach having been weakened and fatigued by my new mode of living, was not in condition to digeſt either. I had been accuſtomed to eat them ſeparately, reſerving the Indian corn for my ſubſiſtence when it might not be in my power to have any other food; perhaps, however, I might have done better, had I taken them together; but I had already ſuffered ſo cruelly from hunger, that my concern for futurity often prevented me from yielding to the demands of preſent appetite. I experienced the truth of what is uſually ſaid of hunters who live entirely on animal food, but which I uſed to find it difficult to believe, namely, that beſides

their

their deriving little nouriſhment from the leaner part, it ſoon becomes offenſive to the taſte, whereas the fat is both more nutritive, and continues to be agreeable to the palate.

We croſſed Red River or Colorado, which in breadth and current is much more conſiderable than either of the other two of the ſame name. We were now in a country excellently ſupplied with beef and veniſon, which were therefore the chief articles of our ſubſiſtence. This country, perhaps one of the moſt beautiful in the world, conſiſts of extenſive plains interſected with rivers and rivulets, on whoſe banks grow tufts of wood, containing various aromatic plants, little known in Europe. We arrived at a deep brook, very properly named *Quitto Calçones*, and in French, *Quitte tes Culottes*, which we paſſed on rafts. But whilſt we were engaged in this operation there appeared a ſmall party of Indians. It was now dark, and our company being ſeparated by the muddy bed of the rivulet, were prevented from uniting for the common defence. The ſavages proceeded directly towards our horſes, which

which were feeding in the meadow, confident that in our preſent circumſtances they ſhould have it in their power to drive them quietly off the field. They had been obſerved, however, by a party of our men, who, aware of their intention, ran inſtantly to oppoſe them; and here our vigilance, combined with their want of numbers, diſappointed them of their booty.

We arrived at the river Guadaloupe, the laſt of any conſequence on the road to San Antonio; and here the ſame tedious and irkſome method of paſſing on rafts was repeated. In four days more we came to plantations of Indian corn, from the appearance of which I could eaſily perceive that the inhabitants of this ſettlement are not ſo miſerably idle as thoſe at Adaés. The crops are large and beautiful, and interſperſed with meadow ground, upon which are reared herds and flocks of almoſt every denomination. We began to obſerve the Barbary fig-tree and a ſpecies of wild myrtle; and I was ſhewn a root reſembling the turnip, a thin ſlice of which acts as phyſic, but I was told its operation is counteracted by taking a ſmall

ſmall quantity of ground Indian corn. Our animals, as well as ourſelves, were now greatly fatigued, and therefore it was thought expedient to make a ſhort reſt. I bought a third mule, and we found ourſelves under the neceſſity of appointing a guard to both mules and horſes.

The reader is poſſibly ſurpriſed to find us attended by ſo numerous a train of animals; but if he conſiders the difficulties of our march, the wild and rugged ſurface of the country, and the occaſion we had for a freſh ſupply of horſes every day, he will eaſily perceive the propriety of our conduct. In ſhort, on the laſt day of November, we arrived in ſafety at the ſettlement of San Antonio.

At this poſt, the ſecond in the ſame direction belonging to the Spaniards, I met with the new governor of the province, whom I had juſt ſeen at Adaés. I found he had taken a northern road, the rivers of which, though practicable on horſeback, are yet never to be attempted with the incumbrance of loaded mules. In the countries bordering on thoſe rivers reſide the ſavage tribes named

named Tegas and Apaches, the laſt of which entertain an implacable enmity to the Spaniards. The Apaches, after driving them from a ſettlement in thoſe parts, called *San Xavier*, were repelled in their turn, and obliged to ſeek habitations in more northern regions. Although the population of ſavage nations is not expected to be very conſiderable, yet, from the province of Louiſiana to San Pedro, we paſſed their villages at intervals of twenty-five and thirty leagues, and ſometimes at a ſhorter diſtance. But the vaſt country ſituated on this ſide of the San Pedro villages, and which ſtretches all the way to Rio Grande, is totally deſtitute of inhabitants. It is true, thoſe regions are ſtill frequented by ſavages; but they have no other object in view than to make war upon the Spaniards, to drive off their cattle, to hunt the buffalo, and to gather *plaquemines* and cheſnuts, with which they retire to their villages in the north. Owing to their very frequent incurſions, however, they have been improperly repreſented as wandering tribes.

Whilſt

Whilſt I remained at this ſettlement, the ſavages through whoſe boundaries we had paſſed at San Pedro, incenſed againſt the governor on account of his prohibition of their trade with the French of Naquadoch, made an irruption into the country, and carried off four hundred horſes from San Antonio. The alarm being given, the garriſon beat to arms, and, mounting their horſes, made a purſuit of a hundred leagues, without being able to come up with the enemy. The Spaniards were on their return home, and had reached the river Guadaloupe, when another party of the ſame nation ruſhed from the woods, and kept up a ſmart fire upon them. The garriſon, after making a vigorous reſiſtance for the ſpace of three hours, at laſt yielded to ſuperior numbers, and loſt on this occaſion, beſides other property, a hundred and fifty horſes. A few days after the garriſon was inſulted again by a detachment of the ſame tribe; and the governor began to ſee the neceſſity of putting the fort in a better ſtate of defence. I offered my ſervices to the garriſon, and we prepared to maintain our poſt with courage and reſolu-

tion ; but the whole affair ended at laſt in a pitiful ſkirmiſh.

The manner of fighting practiſed by the ſavages gave me no mean idea of their military talents. I remarked, that when they firſt meant to attack us at Quitto Calçones, they acted on the preſumption that our force being divided by a difficult rivulet, might probably yield them an unconteſted victory ; and indeed I have no doubt, that had they been either a little more alert in their movements, or powerful in numbers, they muſt have ſucceeded in their deſign. Their action with the Spaniards, as I was told, at the paſſage of Guadaloupe, happened in ſimilar circumſtances, and was conducted on their part with the ſame policy. It is uſual, it ſeems, with the Spaniards on a march to croſs rivers in two diviſions, one eſcorting the governor, and the other covering the rear. Now the moment the governor and his detachment entered the river, the enemy, who lay in ambuſh near the path, roſe and attacked. The inſtant they diſcharged their pieces, they retreated into the plain,

plain, and were covered by their cavalry, who, upon a ſignal, ſprung from their thickets, and advanced at full ſpeed to fall upon the Spaniards. In this manner the engagement was maintained for ſome time, the foot marching up to a certain diſtance, in order to fire upon the enemy, while the cavalry in their turn, proceeding to the charge, covered the infantry in their retreat, and gave them time to re-load. The inferiority in numbers of the Spaniards, and their too great eagerneſs to give aſſiſtance to their friends, inducing them to weaken the rear, the ſavages profited of their confuſion, and throwing themſelves between the main body and the baggage, they remained maſters of the field, and a great number of horſes.

The precaution employed by the ſavages to prevent their being taken in flight, ſeems in a particular manner to merit notice. In contemplation of flight they ſtrip themſelves naked, and anointing their bodies with oil, frequently elude the hands of their purſuers; a practice exactly ſimi-

lar to that which was in uſe among the wreſtlers of antiquity. Upon the whole, however, I do not conſider ſavage nations as ſteady or greatly to be depended upon in the practice of war. Like all other raw militia, the vivacity of their firſt attack ſoon evaporates, and they muſt in general give way to the more obſtinate and perſevering bravery of European regulars. But after all, I was far from being diſſatisfied that they declined the ſiege of Fort San Antonio, being convinced in my own mind that we were not in a condition to hold out againſt a firſt vigorous aſſault.

CHAP. XII.

Deſcription of Fort San Antonio—the Situation of New Mexico has been miſtaken by Geographers—the Spaniſh Settlements in North America not ſo formidable as they have been ſuppoſed—Keenneſs and Sagacity of the Indians—their Mode of catching wild Animals—their Hoſpitality and good Faith—Cruelties practiſed on them by the Spaniards.

FORT San Antonio ſtands in a plain of an oblong form, one ſide of which fronts an angle of a ſmall river in its vicinity. The different avenues leading to the ſettlement are defended by large palliſadoes, while the houſes built upon its circumference ſerve the purpoſe of walls: but being of very conſiderable extent, and many of the houſes being in ruins, it is but weakly fortified, and has much occaſion for a ſtronger garriſon. It is beſides much incumbered from without by ſome miſerable villages, which give encouragement to the incurſions of

of the enemy. The ſpace, too, incloſed by the angle of the river is crowded by a multitude of huts, which are occupied by a number of emigrants from the Canary Iſles. In other reſpects the ſettlement is pleaſantly ſituated, on a ſmall peninſula ſloping gently towards the river; and commands an agreeable proſpect over the oppoſite grounds. The object of greateſt ſurprize in this part of the world is the immenſe ſwarms of cranes which frequent the banks of the rivers. The houſes of the ſettlement may perhaps amount to two hundred, two thirds of which are built of ſtone. Upon the roof is a kind of earthen terrace, which, on account of the little rain which falls, and the temperate nature of the climate, is found abundantly laſting; and indeed, ſince my leaving New Orleans, I did not experience twenty days in all of rainy weather. I am told, however, that the climates of Red River, Nachitoches, and Adaés, are wet, cold, and unwholeſome;* but the rains of Nachitoches and

* This is probably owing to the high woods and marſhy grounds in the vicinity of thoſe places.

Adaés never extend ſo far as this ſettlement, which ſtands in the middle of a plain, and is only ſurrounded by thick woods of the meſquitte. If we except a few clumps of large trees on the banks of Guadaloupe, the noble foreſts of maſſy timber on this route totally diſappear in the neighbourhood of Red River or Colorado.

This military ſtation is the moſt important of four, comprehended within the bounds of this province: to wit, Adaés, at ſeven leagues diſtance from Nachitoches; Acoquiſſas, a hundred leagues ſouth-weſt from Adaés; Labadie de Spiritu Sancto, two hundred to the weſt-ſouth-weſt; and Fort San Antonio, two hundred and fifty leagues weſt and weſt-ſouth-weſt from the ſame point of Adaés. Weſt and a quarter north-weſt from San Antonio, there is alſo the ſtation of San Saba. On the banks of that river, and at the diſtance of a hundred leagues from San Antonio, ſtands the poſt of Rio Grande; and nearly in the ſame direction, at the diſtance of two hundred and fifty leagues from the ſame point, are *Paſſe de Nord* and Santa Fé, in the province of New

Mexico. It appears from this detail, that geographers lay down New Mexico on the map much farther towards the north than it actually is; and though the circuitous path neceſſarily deſcribed by travellers in traverſing uninhabited countries muſt frequently deceive them as to diſtance, yet I am convinced that the moſt northerly of the Spaniſh ſettlements in thoſe regions lies between the 33d and 34th degree of latitude. The province of Cuvilla is at leaſt fifty leagues more to the ſouth than it is repreſented on the map; whilſt that of Sonora, which borders on California, lies ſouth-weſt of Cuvilla. It is true, the Spaniards had formerly poſſeſſions farther northward; but the turbulent temper and frequent inroads of the ſavages compelled them at length to give them up; and it was not without great difficulty they were able to maintain their ground at *San Saba*, *Santa Fé*, and *Paſſe de Nord*; inſomuch, that the firſt of theſe ſtations was once ordered by the Spaniards to be evacuated and demoliſhed. The roads leading from *Nueva Sonora* to the mines of *Serro Prietto*, being rendered almoſt impaſſable by the na-

tives, I ſaw a very conſiderable force called out in order to clear them of the moleſtation of the northern tribes. But how are we to reconcile theſe facts with the number of Spaniſh poſts we find on the map to the northward of the ſettlements above mentioned? The fact ſeems to be, according to the beſt information I have been able to obtain from ſenſible Indians, who have travelled over the northern extremities of this kingdom, that they only exiſt in the imagination of certain geographers.* In this opinion I do not commit my credit with the public on my own conjectures, but on the information of men employed to carry the different articles of cloathing to the Spaniards in their moſt northern ſettlements; as well as on the veracity of ſeveral engineers in the ſuite of the governor, who came from New Sonora, and who had been inſtructed to take plans of all the poſts ſituated within the boundaries of the northern ſavages.

* Perhaps this proceeds from the policy of Spain to make her dominions appear more populous in this part of the world than they really are, and conſequently in the eyes of ſtrangers more powerful.

In

In the ſettlement of San Antonio we find a Spaniſh colony from the Canary Iſles; whilſt all their other ſtations conſiſt merely of ſoldiers, and a few Indians who have been ſeduced from the innocence of ſavage life. Their principal employment is to rear horſes, mules, cows, and ſheep. Their cattle, commonly allowed to roam at large in the woods, are once in two months driven into fields adjoining to the houſes of their owners, where every means is uſed to render them tame and tractable. After having been ſubjected to hunger and confinement, they receive their liberty, and are ſucceeded by others, which experience in their turn a ſimilar courſe of diſcipline. Such of the inhabitants as are at pains to prevent their herds from running entirely wild, poſſeſs five or ſix thouſand head of cattle.

The inhabitants of San Antonio are excellent horſemen, and particularly fond of hunting or *lacing* their wild animals. Having entered the field, and ſtarted an animal they mean to take alive, they give him chace at full ſpeed from wood to valley, till his fatigue enables the hunter to come

within a certain diſtance of him. Here the rider, holding the running nooſe of a ſtrong laſh or thong coiled round his arm in his right hand, throws it with ſuch dexterity, that he ſeldom fails to catch the game round the neck or horns; and in the ſame inſtant, by pulling up his horſe, or turning him abruptly from the line of his career, he checks his prey, and obliges him to ſtop. A cuſtom very ſimilar to this is deſcribed in Anſon's Voyages, and repreſented by the author as peculiar to the coaſt of Patagonia.

They have likewiſe the uſe of tame animals, which, beſides yielding milk, ſupply them with fat and dried fleſh for their extenſive peregrinations. Their horſes and mules are no ſooner a little broken in, than they are offered to ſale; but here the market-price is ſo extremely low, which, indeed, may be imagined, that I have ſeen a good horſe ſold for a pair of ſhoes. Having but one or two keepers for all the cattle of the ſettlement, even their domeſtic animals run day and night in the woods.

The

The keen eye which the habit of close and minute attention has bestowed on those people is truly surprising. Discovering in the morning that one of their cattle has disappeared in the course of the night, they examine the inclined position of the grass over which he must have passed, when they are able to distinguish by the prints of his feet whether he is a horse or mule, and whether he quitted his pasture grazing or in flight: nor do they despair of finding him before they have gone fifteen perhaps twenty leagues from home. In their wars with the savages this extreme nicety of sight is still of greater consequence; but as each party is on its guard against the discernment of the other, and both have the same motives to conceal the direction of their flight, it is usual to set fire to the sward as they retreat, leaving three or four leagues of black desert behind them.

They are often in danger of losing themselves in the meadows, but in order to prevent this inconvenience, they are accustomed to mark particular trees, and the position of the adjacent woods, which serve to assist their

their recollection, and anſwer the purpoſe of conducting-poſts in civilized countries. In their excurſions through the woods they diſcover the quarter of the north by obſerving the ſide of the tree which, being hidden from the ſolar rays, acquires a coat of greeniſh moſs, whilſt that expoſed to the ſouth retains a clean ſkin of a whitiſh colour.

In the neighbourhood of this ſettlement, and ſituated on the river, at the diſtance of two or three leagues from one another, are four miſſions, conſiſting of a couple of Franciſcans each. In the houſes of thoſe miſſionaries, ſavages who have been taken in war, and on whom the reverend fathers have conferred marriage and baptiſm, receive their maintenance and education. In this manner each houſe entertains ſeven or eight men, with their wives and children, who are employed, under the direction of theſe monks, in certain articles of induſtry, the profits of which are applied to the emolument of the miſſion. The rules of theſe miſſions, reſpecting temporal affairs, are nearly the ſame with thoſe obſerved by the Jeſuits in their ſettlements of Paraguay; but they are ap-

plied by the disciples of St. Ignatius in a manner much more liberal and conciliating to the minds of their savage proselytes, than they are here by the followers of St. Francis.

The savages of Tegas are the last who have taken to the use of the firelock, and who maintain any intercourse with the French. Those of Apaches, living about fifty leagues northward from San Antonio, as well as all the maritime tribes between the stations of Acoquissas and Labadie de Spiritu Sancto, still use the bow and arrow. Certain Europeans have represented the latter, named *Coumaches*, as a race of cannibals; but according to the Spaniards, who are probably better acquainted with their manners, they are merely a cruel, dastardly race of savages, who only escape the yoke of slavery, by taking refuge among the rocks, bays, and fastnesses of the sea-coast.

The Spaniards make war upon these miserable tribes, who still retain the bow and arrow, almost with impunity. In case of an engagement, the Spaniards, covering their heads with a shield, and their bodies with a great

great coat, conſiſting of three or four folds of deer-ſkin, quilted with cotton, are in condition to ſet the darts of the enemy at defiance. If the ſavages happen to be few in number, and the Spaniſh cavalry think themſelves certain of an eaſy victory, reſerving their fire for ſituations of greater neceſſity, they uſe the thong, and lace them like wild horſes. As ſoon as a ſavage has been caught in the nooſe, he is bound hand and foot, and carried to the reſidence of a miſſionary, who makes it his buſineſs, by threats, perſuaſion, ſevere faſting, gentleneſs, and laſt of all by marriage, to tame and civilize the manners of his priſoner, who, after being inſtructed in the exiſtence of a Supreme Being, Providence, and the more peculiar doctrines of Chriſtianity, is admitted to the rites of baptiſm.

The violent prejudices of the Spaniards having not only reſtrained them from all intercourſe with the more warlike tribes, but engaged them in a ſyſtem of policy moſt vexatious to theſe nations, their patience was at laſt exhauſted, and they abandoned a vaſt tract of uninhabited country to the north of

New

New Spain. Whether this immenſe territory could have been obtained by open and avowed war is doubtful; at leaſt it muſt have been purchaſed by the Spaniards at a very great expence both of blood and treaſure.

At San Antonio I lived in the family of an excellent Indian, for whom, by reaſon of his faithful, diſintereſted, and patient ſervices, in the courſe of my travels from Adaés, I contracted a moſt ſincere friendſhip. Having now made a conſiderable acquaintance among the natives, I had the ſatisfaction to find, that my plain and ſimple manners were univerſally popular. The good people, I could obſerve, were in hopes that I might be diſpoſed to ſettle in this country, for my inclinations were often ſounded on this ſubject. The quantity of my baggage, which, though far from being very conſiderable, would have been a kind of fortune to a man of their condition, probably ſuggeſted the notion that I was extremely rich. But I am convinced, that my decent and temperate behaviour recommended me above every other conſideration to their eſteem, and might have

have inclined them to approve of my falling in love with one of their daughters; and I will add, in juſt praiſe of Indian beauty, that the perſons and diſpoſitions of individuals among them gave them every right to expect it. And, as we all ate and ſlept in the ſame apartment, no man could have fairer opportunities than myſelf of attending to the perſons of the females, and of obtaining the affections and conſent of a miſtreſs. But, however much impreſſed with the excellence of thoſe pure and gentle manners which are the reſult of freedom, a decent mediocrity of fortune, and the advantages of a pious education; and however ſenſible I might be to the charms of their women, the amiable qualities of their minds, and the beauty and fertility of the ſurrounding country, the ſtrong partialities I ſtill retained for my native ſoil, were not to be ſubdued.

With an eye to my approaching journey I purchaſed a horſe, three mules, and a conſiderable ſtock of proviſions; for I trembled at the thoughts of being again expoſed to the calamity of hunger, the anguiſh of which I will candidly own I had lately experienced

in

in ſo exceſſive a degree, as to abſorb every other idea and ſentiment in my mind, and indeed ſo as almoſt to efface the firſt and ſtrongeſt principles of my early education.

At San Antonio, as at Adaés, money having little circulation, I choſe to employ a part of my linen, which bears a higher and more convenient value with the Indians, in the payment of my debts; beſides, I wiſhed to be ſparing of what money was in my poſſeſſion, knowing that the period was at no great diſtance when that article would reſume its uſual conſequence. My linen, however, had been conſiderably diminiſhed by the theft of a Creole native of Sartille, who ſtole from me a dozen of ſhirts, and ſome other neceſſaries; but at the ſame time I acknowledge, that I received from an inhabitant of San Antonio a bill of exchange upon Mexico, of twenty piaſtres, as a compenſation for his friend's diſhoneſty. I have mentioned the place of this Creole's nativity, becauſe in the little misfortunes of my life I have always obſerved, that the malice of man is in direct proportion to his birth, education, and conſequence in the world: innocent and ingenuous manners diminiſhing progreſſively

greſſively from the native of the woods, to the villager, Indian, Creole, and Spaniard; the laſt of whom is the leaſt friendly and ſociable of the whole. From the ſavage, or half-ſavage Indian, I never received an injury or injuſtice of any kind; and therefore, in my peregrinations through their hamlets, I always choſe to live with the Indian in preference to the Spaniard; a preference which, while it adminiſtered to my ſatisfaction, by means of the intercourſe I enjoyed with men unperverted by art and refinement, was likewiſe more agreeable to all my views as a traveller.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Departure from San Antonio—the Caravan is in Danger of being plundered by the Indians—Face of the Country the Author paſſes through—its Natural Hiſtory—a Comet is obſerved—Arrival at Sartille.

HAVING made the neceſſary preparations for our departure, we began our journey on the 17th of December; but had ſcarcely proceeded to the diſtance of five leagues, when we were adviſed by a monk to be on our guard againſt a party of warlike ſavages who infeſted the roads, and from whom he himſelf had juſt made a very narrow eſcape. Our convoy having quitted us at San Antonio, we found, that in caſe we ſhould have the misfortune to be attacked, we were entirely without the means of defence, and therefore it was deemed moſt prudent to paſs ſome time at the houſe of this miſſionary. We ſent out ſcouts to reconnoitre the woods, who returned to us next day; when, learning that the ſavages had

diſappeared in thoſe parts, we reſumed our march, carefully avoiding, however, the beaten paths, leſt we ſhould fall in with them by ſurprize. We traverſed large tracts of a ſhort ſpecies of the meſquitte, the only reſemblance of woods we had met with ſince we paſſed San Antonio. Theſe were ſucceeded by a number of little hills abounding in ſprings, by which the ſubjacent grounds were rendered almoſt impaſſable. Following the direction of their ſtreams, we were conducted to a river, ſmall, it is true, but, on account of rocks, cavities in its channel, and rapidity of current, extremely difficult of paſſage. Hence an extenſive ſcene of meadows and rivulets, ſkirted with the meſquitte, ſtretches to Rio Trio, a river which we paſſed without any inconvenience.

We met with ſeveral lakes abounding in fiſh and wild fowl, and arrived at *Rio de les Nuices*, which we found almoſt deſtitute of water, but whoſe channel, containing a deep mud, was extremely embarraſſing to our march. By means, however, of different ſtrata of earth and faggots, after much trouble and fatigue, we accompliſhed our paſſage.

Here a large extent of beautiful meadow introduced us to an open champaign country; and, after a journey of ten days, we came to Rheda, which is a ſmall village conſiſting of about a dozen houſes. Rheda is fourſcore leagues diſtant from San Antonio, and ſtands upon a river called Rio Grande, or, as it ſtands upon the maps, Rio Bravo. Next to the Miſſiſſippi this is the moſt conſiderable river in thoſe regions, and indeed bears ſome reſemblance to it both in ſize and ſtrength of current.

From Rio Grande, which we croſſed in a ferry boat, the country becomes much more populous. We began to obſerve the tops of high mountains, which, as I had not met with one conſiderable hill ſince the commencement of my travels, had ſomewhat the air of novelty. The country in ſome places was well cultivated, and preſented to the view of the traveller extenſive fields of Indian corn. The atmoſphere ſwarmed with numberleſs cranes; and our journey lying acroſs a beautiful as well as plentiful country, compared with the former part of it, became extremely pleaſant. We paſſed the rapid

currents of Salt River, which, a little higher, takes the name of *Sabinas*. Here our company was attacked by a violent flux, owing to the mineral waters of the country, which are ſo powerful in their operation, that even our animals were tormented with the ſame diſorder. We paſſed ſeveral hot ſprings, which are remarkably ſalt and bitter to the taſte, and yet ſuch was the water we were obliged to uſe over the whole of this dry and inhoſpitable diſtrict. The low grounds abound in woods of the meſquitte, or prickly currant, under which is a neat clean ſoil; whilſt the heights are covered with thorny ſhrubs of a puny growth, of which there are various ſpecies curiouſly diverſified in the ſhape and ſize of the prickle. In one it reſembles a dart; in another a ſaw; in a third a harpoon; and all of them have a point like that of the niceſt needle. Theſe enter the fleſh upon the ſlighteſt contact, and are only extracted by an inciſion into the ſkin, which occaſions the moſt acute pain. This is one of thoſe cruel taxes which Nature has thought proper to impoſe on the patient curioſity of the traveller.

Another

Another inconvenience in this country is the abominable ſmell of an animal, without the agility but nearly of the ſame ſize with a rabbit. This creature, when hard preſſed, and finding himſelf in danger of being taken, emits a moſt intolerable ſtench, which threatens ſuffocation to his purſuers, and is only only eluded by a precipitate flight. I ſaw in the plains of Tegas an animal about the ſize of a large cat, and reſembling that ſpecies in his mouth, noſe, and ears. He had a ſhort reddiſh fur, his body and paws thick and ſhort, with the face of a rabbit. One of them we were lucky enough to kill, which was roaſted, and afforded an excellent repaſt. His fleſh is fair, pleaſant to the taſte, and interlarded with fat in the manner of pork. The name of this animal in the Indian language is Taccouage. I heard much of the rattle-ſnake, but never ſaw one in the whole courſe of my travels through this country.

At a ſhort diſtance on the left appear the mines of Sierra and Luigana, ſurrounded by a croud of hamlets. We paſſed a number of ſcattered villages belonging to the Indians

of *Punta Sant Yago* and *Caldera*, and came in view of a detached mountain to the weſtward, which is named, from its ſhape, the Table of Caldera. This mountain riſes on all ſides in the form of a ſugar-loaf, in ſuch a manner as to be inacceſſible even to the goat, except by one path, which is likewiſe extremely difficult. The top, however, ſtretches into a fruitful plain, which being well ſupplied with rich ſprings of fine water, affords excellent paſture to numerous herds of cattle. A houſe built acroſs the upper-end of the path prevents their eſcape, and confines them within the bounds of this ſingular park or terrace.

The territories of thoſe civilized Indians who fell under the Spaniſh yoke upon the death of Montezuma, including the village of Caldera, begin at Salt River. We had now entered the mountains, and the fair plains of Tegas gave place to rugged and barren rocks, with here and there a little valley, which produces the wild aloe, the Barbary fig-tree, and a naked plant of a ſingle ſtem, known in Europe by the title of *Cierge Paſchal*. The trunk, ſpringing from the

the ground to the height of fifteen feet, ſends off four or five branches, which, diverging between three and four feet from the ſtem, ſhoot together to the elevation of twenty feet; and this is the only plant or tree to be found in the whole of this country.

In four days more we entered among trees, which, in the form of their leaves and arrangement of their branches, appeared to be a ſpecies of date. It may be claſſed with the fig-bannan of India, which is known in the Philippine iſles by the name of Dedas de Dama, or Lady's Fingers. The ſoil in this diſtrict is remarkably light and dry.

We left the ſtation of Cuvilla to the weſt, at the diſtance of twenty leagues, and came to a country ſupplied with ſheep and goats, which are in ſuch abundance as to be often killed for the value of the ſkin. We followed the courſe of a little river above Montery, which is extremely ſalt, as indeed is all the water we had hitherto met with from Rio Salado, or Sabinas; its borders, however, are cultivated, and peopled with Indians. Having travelled over a mere deſert, con-

ſiſting chiefly of high and ſavage mountains, we at laſt came in view of a beautiful plain well cultivated, in which is ſituated Sartille; and here we arrived on the 20th of January, 1768, after travelling one hundred and ſixty leagues ſouth-weſt. I ought to have mentioned, that two days before my arrival at Sartille we had an eclipſe of the ſun, appearing to me to be more conſiderable, and more exactly central, than that of the 1ſt of April, 1764, which I had an opportunity of obſerving in Provence.

CHAP

CHAP. XIV.

Deſcription of Sartille, a populous Town, belonging both to Spaniards and Indians—whimſical Performance of religious Ceremonies — Bull Fights — Gallantry of the Spaniards—Natural Hiſtory of the Provinces of New Spain, Parras, and Reyno.

SARTILLE is a pretty large and populous town belonging to both Spaniards and Indians. The churches and ſquares are tolerably handſome; the ſtreets broad, clean, and lined on each ſide with houſes of ſtone. In general, however, it is built in a bad taſte, particularly the houſes of the Indians, who pay no regard to convenience in the diſtribution of their apartments. The fountains which one meets in different parts of Sartille are of much uſe in allaying the violent heat of the ſun. Sartille contains a number of conſiderable merchants, and is the chief mart for ſavage productions imported from thoſe countries we had lately viſited, and which are afterwards retailed among the inhabitants

habitants of the neighbourhood. Sartille likewiſe ſerves as a repoſitory for different articles of apparel, as well as the luxuries of life, which the ſavages accept in exchange for their horſes, ſkins, and dried proviſions. The Indians are the only part of the community who avoid the low debauchery of the multitude, the fatal conſequences of which their neighbours experience, without knowing by what means they may be remedied. The character of the people at large is haughty, fraudulent, and deceitful. With great pretenſions to generoſity, they are at pains to conceal their natural ſentiments, which are both illiberal and ſelfiſh. In fine, they have all the pride and ſtatelineſs of Caſtile, without the noble and generous qualities of the true Spaniard.

One diſtrict of Sartille is occupied by Spaniards only, or by ſuch as affect to be of that nation; for the fact is, that by far the greater number of them have not one eighth part of European blood in their veins. Their colour is a mixture of the Indian, negro, and European complexions. The firſt is conſidered here as of the loweſt extraction,

and

and therefore has little connection with thoſe who either are or pretend to be Europeans.

The ſecond diſtrict is inhabited by Indians named Traſcaltequas, who, in proportion as the Spaniards are haughty and indolent, are gentle, affable, and induſtrious. It is this claſs of the people who apply themſelves to the labour of the ſoil, and who cultivate thoſe fields and gardens whence the inhabitants are ſupplied with wheat and Indian corn in abundance. Here, for the firſt time ſince my departure from New Orleans, I had the pleaſure to meet with excellent wheat bread. The gardens produce apples, figs, grapes, every European plant, and a ſpecies of ſhrub from the juice of which the natives are uſed to make a tolerable beverage. This ſhrub, which is frequent all over New Spain, is named *maguey*, and its ſap *pouchre*.

Though it was now the month of January, we enjoyed, under a ſky ſtill more pure and ſerene than that of San Antonio, the moſt delightful weather in the world. I aſſiſted at the feaſt of Candlemas, which is celebrated at Sartille with much ſolemnity, but

but in a manner ſomewhat new. In the morning, immediately after maſs, the image of the Virgin is carried with great pomp through the principal ſtreets, and being placed on a theatre cloſe to a circus erected for the purpoſe of bull-fighting, every one retires. Upon the company's return from their afternoon's nap, bulls are brought upon the ſtage, and the ſpectacle begins, accompanied by a ridiculous kind of muſic performed in an orcheſtra at the elbow of the Virgin. The exhibition continues till the approach of night, when the Virgin, eſcorted by a ſecond proceſſion, returns to her uſual reſidence in the church. The combat of the bulls is ſucceeded by a fair, the principal articles in which are ſweetmeats, wines, confections, and many other incitements to gluttony. On this occaſion is practiſed every ſpecies of Spaniſh gallantry, though the people are in general ſo poor, that many of them pawn their laſt ſhirt in order to entertain their friends with the delicacies of the fair. I was diverted to obſerve with what folly and extravagance huſbands ape towards their wives all the little

arts

arts of the lover. I saw one of those women, a person apparently not destitute of good sense, who chose to be offended with her husband, because, being without a penny in his pocket, he wanted the civility to part with a favourite couteau-de-chasse for the gratification of her caprice. It is the fashion for both parties to affect a grave and serious deportment; while the husband makes it his business to demean himself towards his mate as if it were only the dawn of his courtship. This festival, one similar to which I saw at San Antonio in honour of the Conception, lasted three days. On the eve of the last, it is customary for the people to pay their respects to the Virgin, in masquerade, in which some affect the character of devils, others that of angels, whilst the greatest part appear in the male and female dresses of the Moors. The image of the Virgin is conveyed from the church, and being introduced to the ball-room, at the house of the master of the ceremonies, the dancing begins: mean while, the masks are entertained with a collation, and the evening closes with a rude dramatic performance. Next day the

same

ſame diverſions are repeated with the combat of bulls, and continue till the fall of night, when the feſtival being ended, the image of the Virgin, attended by a proceſſion, is carried back to the church. It often happens that uſages originally inſtituted for pious purpoſes, degenerate at laſt into the moſt ridiculous and extravagant abuſes and abſurdities.

Eaſt and ſouth-eaſt from Sartille are ſituated the provinces of Parras and Reyno, which abound in good wine, ſugar, fruit, Indian corn, wheat, and cattle. On the coaſt of Reyno is the harbour of Tempic, a coaſt well ſupplied with great variety of excellent fiſh. The province of New Spain produces a ſmall quantity of cochineal, a ſpecies of inſect which feeds on a prickly plant, reſembling in ſome reſpects the Barbary fig-tree, but whoſe leaves are much ſmaller, and of a finer texture. This inſect, after making a little pod attached to the leaves, ſhuts itſelf up in it, and dies. By degrees it acquires colour and conſiſtency, and takes the form of cochineal immediately before its laſt preparation. In due ſeaſon the

Indian

Indian ſpreads a linen cloth under the leaves, and ſhaking the branches, the pods or cochineal fall to the ground. This uſeful commodity grows in the fields like indigo, without the aid of cultivation, and is gathered by the Indians alone, few of whom have any conception of its commercial value.

My fellow-traveller had been unable to accompliſh his buſineſs ſo ſoon as he expected; but now, being in the beginning of February, we began to prepare for our journey. We were informed that the roads were tolerably good, and therefore hoped to proceed more expeditiouſly than it had been hitherto in our power, by reaſon of our baggage. On this account I intruſted the principal part of my neceſſaries to a Franciſcan friar, who undertook to forward them to Mexico as ſoon as he had delivered certain articles of apparel at different miſſions, ſome of which we had viſited on our way to Sartille. The men who accompanied us to this place now returned to their own country; and here I had the mortification to bid adieu for ever to my good Indian of San Antonio. His unwearied zeal to accommodate himſelf to my

auk-

aukwardneſs and inexperience, in countries entirely deſtitute of every convenience of life, made a deep impreſſion on my mind, and is what I cannot ſufficiently acknowledge. Here therefore was I obliged to hire another ſervant to attend me in the farther proſecution of my travels.

CHAP. XV.

The Author quits Sartille, and purſues his Journey towards New Mexico—Vengeance exerciſed by the Spaniards upon the Indians, after a Revolt of the latter—Reflections upon the Puniſhment of Exile—politic Conduct of the Spaniards towards the Indians ſubjected to them.

WE departed from Sartille on our way to Mexico on the 10th day of February, 1768,; and as we were now entering a country ſaid to be liberally ſupplied with all the neceſſaries of life, we were relieved from the hardſhips of carrying our proviſions along

along with us. The firſt three days of our march preſented us with a cheerful and populous country, but the three ſucceeding led us over a dry deſart ſoil, covered with a kind of acrid duſt, poſſeſſing ſome of the qualities of quick-lime. Our preſent route ſupplied little water, except from wells of great depth, which were brackiſh and unpleaſant; and even this was only to be obtained for money, at intervals of twenty miles diſtance. The keeper of the well lives hard by it in a miſerable hut, which is the only kind of habitation I ſaw in this country. Having paſſed this inhoſpitable region, and about the ſame extent of meadow-ground, we came to a mine named *Charcas*, in the vicinity of which ſtands a little neat town conſiderably leſs than Sartille, but in proportion to its ſize much more populous.

Here my fellow-traveller, the late governor of Tegas, fell ill; but as I was now become impatient of delay, and as the road ſeemed tolerably frequented, I determined, though reluctantly, to take leave of his excellency. He expreſſed much regret at my

departure, and even complained that I deſerted him upon the road; but I was under the neceſſity of travelling with the utmoſt expedition, having learned that the Manilla galleon had arrived at Acapulco, from which I was ſtill diſtant no leſs than two hundred and fifty leagues. It was the middle of February, and this veſſel was to ſail for Manilla towards the end of March.

I had enjoyed good health ſince I left San Antonio, except a rheumatic affection in my knee, which I cured by means of exerciſe and a cataplaſm of bruiſed mint fried with goat's greeſe. I likewiſe ſuffered at times from a weakneſs in my ſtomach, occaſioned by the Indian corn I had been obliged to live upon all the way from Sartille.

We arrived at the village of Venau, compoſed entirely of Indians, who live under the juriſdiction of their chiefs; and I was informed that the Spaniards had juſt executed twelve of the moſt criminal of the people, who had been concerned in a late inſurrection. The heads of the offenders appeared upon poles erected on the ſite of their houſes, which, after ſending all their relations into baniſh-

baniſhment, the vengeance of public juſtice had razed to the ground.

Exile is a puniſhment much in uſe among the Spaniards; and its object being to conſult the ſecurity of the public, by ſeparating the innocent from the guilty, and by producing a change in their condition, perhaps equally advantageous to both, is evidently derived from the wiſeſt policy. The friends and adherents of the ſufferers who remain, tainted with dangerous principles, and who, in any ſituation favourable to their deſigns, might be ready to imitate their conduct, the probable means of ſucceſs being withdrawn, will continue quiet in their obedience. Meanwhile, in their intercourſe with the better part of ſociety, they obſerve the happy tendency of temperate and well regulated lives, begin to open their eyes to falſe maxims of bad education, and at length gratify their deſires in the ſurer paths of good example. I believe it will be found, that great crimes in almoſt every inſtance originate either in opportunity or deſpair; and hence nothing ſeems better calculated to check the progreſs of vicious principles,

than aſſociating with the orderly, charitable, and induſtrious part of the community.

Beſides, exile frequently places the offender in a better ſituation than he before enjoyed; a circumſtance of ſuch importance to the encouragement of good morals, that I am perſuaded there are few men ſo naturally immoral as that, had they been born to the advantages of a fine climate and ſoil, would not have eſcaped that ſhame and miſery which unfortunately terminate many of their miſerable lives; moderate and profitable labour, united to the native charms of a good life, would have reſtrained the greateſt part of them from the ruinous conſequences of violence and injuſtice.

It would be difficult to give a more ſtriking illuſtration of theſe obſervations, than may be found in the hiſtory of our own colonies; whoſe manners, conſidering the diſtance of time between their reſpective colonizations, may be expected to be a good deal different. The morals of the people in the province of Louiſiana and the Phillipine Iſles are much more ſimple and pure than either in St. Domingo or Mexico. Now, without meaning

any

any reflection on the extraction of certain Creoles in Louiſiana and the Phillipine Iſles, every one knows that the anxiety of government to colonize the firſt, gave admiſſion to men of all deſcriptions, whilſt the laſt have long been the ordinary places of baniſhment for all manner of convicts from the kingdom of Mexico. I have ſeen at Manilla opulent merchants, officers, and indeed men of every condition, who, after wearing chains on their limbs, as badges of their infamy, have, in a country where the temptations to vice are not rare, learned to conduct themſelves in a manner every way regular and exemplary.

The circumſtances of the country in the neighbourhood of Venau ſeemed to warrant this example of ſeverity in the Spaniards; and ſince they only puniſhed the ringleaders of the conſpiracy with death, contenting themſelves with the baniſhment of inferior inſurgents, it is but fair to admit that on this occaſion they tempered the rigour of the law with the milder precepts of humanity. And here I muſt remark, that either Indian population is ſurpriſingly rapid, or the accounts

we have received from hiſtorians, of the horrid maſſacres executed by the Spaniards upon the natives of the Mexican empire, have been greatly exaggerated. I am an eye-witneſs to the preſent vaſt population of this kingdom, as well as to the eaſy circumſtances in which, though in ſubordination to their conquerors, the original natives in general paſs their lives. In ſome places the collection of the public revenue and the care of the police are depoſited in the hands of their chiefs; while the laws of the Spaniſh government have, upon the whole, a tendency to make them good ſubjects, rather than miſerable and diſcontented ſlaves. Among the inferior orders of Indians, many are admitted to offices in the church, army, magiſtracy; and in all the principal Spaniſh towns, particularly at Manilla, they are invited to a full incorporation with the natives of Spain. It is in the remoter parts of the country alone, where the proud title of conqueror inſpiring many vagabonds, whom fortune has raiſed from inſignificance to better circumſtances, with inſolence and brutality, that the poor Indian is made to

feel

feel the humiliating ſtate of his dependence. In ſuch ſituations, while little intercourſe prevails between the two nations, the European gives free ſcope of all thoſe abſurd prejudices which people of different countries are apt to entertain reſpecting each other, and which are in a peculiar manner incident to the Spaniards. But the patient and unaſſuming ſpirit of the Indian, who, in point of number, is infinitely his maſter's ſuperior, conforming to the proud and imperious temper of the Spaniard, the character of both jointly, though accidentally, contributes to order and ſubordination in the ſtate.

CHAP. XVI.

Arrival at the Gold and Silver Mines of Potoſi—Deſcription of the Town of Potoſi—peculiar Mode of catching wild Animals, practiſed by the Inhabitants—the Author quits Potoſi, and paſſes through a rich and luxuriant Country.

THE Spaniard whom I hired at Sartille, and who ſucceded to my good Indian of San Antonio, was a man of a bad character. As long as I enjoyed the benefit of the governor's company, from whom I had juſt parted, I conſidered myſelf ſecure againſt injury from whatever quarter; but we were now alone, and with the opinion I entertained of this Spaniard, I could not help being a good deal apprehenſive of danger. Luckily, however, he ſeemed to have no arms about his perſon, while I, as uſual, wore a couteau-de-chaſſe at my girdle. My horſes and mules had been always kept at graſs with thoſe of the governor, and conſequently had hitherto coſt me neither trouble nor

nor expence ; but I was now afraid to truſt them in the cuſtody of my Spaniard during night, leſt he ſhould decamp, and leave me to make the beſt of my way on foot in the morning.

As on this route the traveller eaſily finds a houſe for his accommodation in the evening, I uſed the precaution to purchaſe from my hoſt the provender neceſſary for my animals over night; but as in theſe inns there is no ſuch convenience as a ſtable, I ordered the Spaniard to ſleep within doors, while I lay in the field, at the foot of the ſtake to which my mules were made faſt. Beſides, as I was always more careful of my beaſts than myſelf, I knew by this means in what manner they fed, and in what condition they were able to travel next day. It is ſurpriſing how much they ſeemed hampered and diſſatisfied with their confinement. The three firſt nights they would eat nothing but a little cut graſs ; and it was with the utmoſt difficulty I could make them chew their corn, after taking the pains to moiſten it for them in ſalt water. On the morning ſubſequent to the firſt night they paſſed

paſſed in this unnatural ſituation, ſuch was the benumbed condition of their limbs, that it was impoſſible to ſay from their motions that they had a ſingle joint in their bodies. However, what with pulling them after us by force, and a ſevere application of the whip, they began at length not to walk but to leap, dragging their hinder legs as if they had been tied in halters; meanwhile, their blood becoming warm, and the circulation accelerated by diſcipline and exerciſe, they gradually recovered the ordinary uſe of their limbs.

On the ſecond day of my journey, I arrived at the celebrated mines of gold and ſilver at San Louis Potoſi, the richeſt of which is that of Serro San Pedro. Potoſi is a handſome well-built town, large, populous, and ſituated in the midſt of beautiful gardens. The ſtreets are neat, and run in ſtrait lines; the churches magnificent; the people opulent, and in poſſeſſion of all the comforts and conveniencies of life. The Indians, however, appear to be of a melancholy humour all over this province; for, beſides the ordinary hardſhips of a yoke to which they have ever ſubmitted with reluctance,

the impoſition of new taxes, and the abolition of the order of the Jeſuits, were recent cauſes of much diſſatisfaction. Their chiefs to the diſtance of Venau, mindful of many former injuries, and in reſentment of what they conſidered additional oppreſſion, engaged their vaſſals in a kind of revolt, which, as the natives are twenty to one Spaniard, without the prompt interference of government, and the ſeverities exerciſed for its ſuppreſſion, might have been of ſerious conſequences.

I purchaſed a horſe at Potoſi, this country being eminently diſtinguiſhed for a fine breed of that animal, as well as for rearing cows for the conſumption of Mexico. The method employed here to catch wild cattle is, perhaps, peculiar to thoſe people: the cattle are generally permitted to roam at large over the fields; but in caſe of a ſale are hunted down in the following manner: the maſter coming up to a herd on horſeback and at full ſpeed, forces them to a gallop; but in a ſhort time they are worn out with fatigue, and ſink to the ground on their knees; he then alights from his horſe, and, exerting all his

his ſtrength, raiſes the animal obliquely by the tail; by which means ſhe loſes her balance, and drops upon her noſe; an attitude ſo aukward and confounding to the cow, that ſhe will remain a whole day without attempting to recover her liberty. Selecting therefore ſuch as he can immediately diſpoſe of, the reſt are relieved from their confinement.

We left to the weſtward of this route the provinces Guadalaxara and Zacatecas, with their different towns, in the neighbourhood of which are mines of conſiderable value.* This country is full of mineral riches, and ſtill there is a great deal of real though concealed poverty; for the Creoles in general acquire and diſſipate their money with an equal facility. After ſpending two days at Potoſi, I reſumed my journey, and paſſed through a country pleaſantly diverſified with hills, villages, and fields of wheat and Indian corn: a ſack of Indian corn is ſold here for two and ſix-pence, when the market price is at its higheſt ſtandard. In reſpect to cul-

* I was told there were many more to the ſouth-weſt of Potoſi.

ture

ture and population, this country is very much the ſame with that ſituated between Charcas and Potoſi. The Indians, at whoſe houſes I always choſe to lodge, are ſimple and hoſpitable in their manners; good health, gentleneſs of diſpoſition, eaſe, and innocence of life, are nothing more in them than the natural conſequences of that temperance and love of induſtry to which they are devoted. They are plain in their dreſs, and wholly unaddicted to the proud and luxurious manners of their conquerors. A few of them have adopted, in ſome meaſure, the Spaniſh faſhions; but by far the greateſt part adhere to the taſte and modes of their anceſtors. The ordinary dreſs of the men is a goat-ſkin, and conſiſts of breeches and a kind of ſhirt deſcending to the girdle, with a hat in the ſtile of an European. The women wear a piece of cloth tied round the waiſt, which falls down to the middle of the leg, and a ſhort cloak over the neck and ſhoulders. Their hair is formed into treſſes, and knotted in different modes on the back part of the head, which is kept conſtantly uncovered.

Beſides

Beſides the alcades, who compoſe a kind of conſulate, in which reſides a portion of civil and military juriſdiction, the commandant of the province, the king's courts of juſtice, the biſhops, chapters, and monks, form an extenſive ſyſtem of magiſtracy. This rich champaign country is divided into baronies under different titles; and from theſe the public offices are endowed with large eſtates, upon which they have erected beautiful ſeats, and from which they derive very opulent revenues. The luxury and magnificence of the higher orders of the inhabitants are in all reſpects equal to what you find among our firſt nobility in Europe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Arrival at the City of San Miguel el Grande, from whence the Author proceeds to the Town of San Juan del Rio—large commodious Villages announce at length his Approach to the Capital, and accordingly he discovers from the Heights, the City of Mexico in the Centre of a very extensive Lake—the City of Mexico and its Environs described—Customs and Pursuits of its opulent Inhabitants—annual Commemoration of the Conquest of Mexico.

FOUR days after my departure from Potosi I arrived at San Miguel el Grande, situated on the declivity of a hill, a city much more beautiful and considerable in extent than any I had hitherto visited. The houses, streets, and gardens, are in a better stile, have a much nobler effect, and announce to the eye the superior wealth and consequence of the inhabitants. Next day I took lodging in the suburbs of Queretano, a place famous for the excellence of its manufactures

factures in cloth, hats, and other branches of merchandize. Thence I proceeded to a pretty populous town, named San Juan del Rio, near a beautiful river, on whoſe banks are public walks ſhaded with ſeveral rows of fine trees; the trees, however, of this country are few in number, and, except ſuch as are found ſcattered on the borders of rivers, have a very bleak and diſmal appearance. They conſiſt chiefly of the Barbary fig-tree, which ſeldom grows taller than from twenty-five to thirty feet. The ſoil, however, is in a ſtate of good cultivation, extremely populous, and furniſhed with a great number of large towns. Soon after leaving Juan del Rio, the traveller comes to mountains of conſiderable height; and for three ſucceeding days he ſees nothing but large commodious villages, which intimate his approach to a great metropolis.

Accordingly, on the 28th of February, having travelled a hundred and fifty leagues ſouth from Sartille, I had the pleaſure to diſcover, from the heights, at the diſtance of about a league, a very extenſive lake, in the centre of which is built the city of

Mexico. It has the effect of an immenſe maſs of building, connected with the land by cauſeways or embankments raiſed to a great height above the water. At the foot of the mountain, and on the borders of the lake, is ſituated the village of Noſtra Senora de Guadaloupe, which one might miſtake for a little European town. Here the only curioſities worth the traveller's notice are a beautiful church and aqueduct, which, with the whole kingdom of Mexico, are conſecrated to the ſame Noſtra Senora. I now proceeded to the capital by a cauſeway at leaſt a hundred feet in breadth, and three miles in length, which reſts upon a ſeries of arches kept in excellent repair, and meant to give free paſſage to the briny waters of the lake. Five cauſeways of equal magnificence, leading to the different quarters of this great city, facilitate its communication with the adjacent country. It is about ſix leagues in circumference, and defended only by barriers in the nature of turnpike-gates.

The lake, containing a bottom of deep mud, which is every where impaſſable on

foot, anſwers all the purpoſes of artificial fortifications; whilſt an extreme ſcarcity of wood in the neighbouring country equally ſecures the Mexicans from every ſpecies of invaſion by water. The ſtreets in general are broad, run in ſtraight lines, and have their names inſcribed on the wall, with the number of each houſe on the door; a circumſtance of great advantage to ſtrangers, who otherwiſe would be in conſtant danger of loſing their way. The inns, like thoſe in the adjacent country, are large, handſome buildings; but the traveller is not a little mortified upon entering them, to find they contain nothing but empty apartments, deſtitute both of furniture and proviſions. The houſes, conſiſting for the greater part of three or four ſtories, are good; and the places of public reſort, ſuch as walks, ſquares, and gardens, are delightful. The cathedral, the caſtle of the Spaniſh viceroy, and the ſimple remains of the palace and baths of the ancient emperors of Mexico, occupy three ſides of the principal ſquare. Next to theſe buildings, the mint is an object of curioſity to the traveller, on account of the vaſt piles

of

of ingots with which its courts are conſtantly filled, and which are brought hither in order to have their weight and fineneſs aſcertained. The metal, after paſſing the aſſay-office, ſuffers a deduction of the king's fifth, in conſideration of liberty granted to work the mines, which in general are the property of private perſons.

The Baratillo, a ſpecies of exchange, from the regularity and rich ornaments of the building, merits alſo the attention of the traveller; and if he is not tired, he will find the piazzas, allotted to the purpoſes of a flower-market, millinery, and paſtry ſhops, as well as for the accommodation of the clothier and jeweller, in the ſame ſtile of highly ornamented architecture.

Some of the fine arts, particularly painting and ſculpture, which are chiefly employed in adorning the churches, are cultivated by the Indians with very conſiderable ſucceſs. But of all the trades in this city, the myſtery of the goldſmith is held in the higheſt repute, and his workmanſhip, tho' heavy, is far from being deficient either in taſte or finiſhing. Silver, eſpecially in the

churches, is applied to an infinity of different purpoſes. But in order to have an idea of the immenſe riches of this metropolis, the traveller ought to be here the day on which they commemorate the conqueſt of Mexico. In honour of this great feſtival, every Mexican vies with his neighbour in an oſtentatious diſplay of whatever is moſt coſtly, rare, and ſplendid, in his poſſeſſion; and indeed it would be difficult to eſtimate the value of the prodigious quantities of gold and ſilver in different forms which on this occaſion meet the public eye. Silver is eſteemed little above a common metal, and hence is frequently ſubſtituted, by the ſumptuous Mexican, for the purpoſes of plating the wheels of his carriage, and ſhoeing the hoofs of his horſes.

The Spaniards and Creoles of the firſt claſs, having loſt all deſire of reſiding on the oppoſite ſhore of the Atlantic, where they would have fewer enjoyments, and much leſs conſequence, live at Mexico in a ſtate of ſplendour and magnificence. Elegant and faſhionable dreſſes are very dear; but modeſt and decent apparel, and all kinds of

pro-

proviſions, are remarkably cheap. A diſtance of two hundred leagues is little regarded by the indefatigable Indian, who, for a ſmall profit, imports the neceſſaries of life from all corners of the country. By his virtuous toil and induſtry he eſcapes that ſordid indigence and miſery which devour the lower claſs of the Spaniards. The luxury of the great families, their gaming, the magnificence of their houſes, the ſplendor of their furniture, the number of their domeſtics, their carriages drawn by four, perhaps ſix mules; every thing, in ſhort, conſpires to impreſs the traveller with the higheſt idea of Mexican wealth. But in proportion as men of the firſt condition are rich, thoſe of the lower ſort among the Spaniards are poor and wretched; inſomuch that, under a great coat hanging in a thouſand tatters, you will frequently find neither ſhirt nor breeches. In one word, drunkenneſs, debauchery, card-playing, and cock-fighting, conſtitute the habitual occupations of all ſexes and conditions of the people.

I obſerved, that the Mexicans in converſation frequently applied the term *Mecos* to

the northern ſavages, and ſpoke of them with every ſign of extreme averſion and terror. Chychymecos, when applied by one Mexican to another, ſeems to denote the higheſt degree of inſult and reproach. Now are the Chychymecos a particular nation of ſavages ſtill more cruel and ferocious than the Mecos? or is Chychy only an aggravation of what is implied in the word Mecos? As to all this I confeſs myſelf entirely at a loſs. One thing is certain, however, that the Indians who inhabit the northern regions of this kingdom, have long renounced the patient and ſubmiſſive character of their anceſtors; and hence the Spaniards are obliged to maintain, at a great expence, a ſtrong body of Creoles, who are conſtantly employed in carrying on hoſtilities againſt thoſe warlike tribes. Upon my arrival here, a detachment of theſe troops was diſpatched to the province of Sonora, and the object of this expedition was to clear the roads leading from Mexico to the mines of Serro Prietto, as well as Matanchel, and other ſea-ports, by means of which their trade is carried on with California. Theſe wars all

tend

tend to the enlargement of the Spaniſh dominions, already almoſt without bounds; and one may ſafely affirm, that the number of great towns, vaſt population, fertility of ſoil, mines, and other rich productions, peculiar to this country, render Mexico, though not one of the moſt powerful, yet the moſt magnificent empire in the world.*

During my abode here the Mexican inquiſitors, whoſe diſcipline is exerciſed with great ſeverity, ordered ſeveral perſons to be whipped through the ſtreets, among whom were a couple of unhappy women, the victims of an abſurd and cruel ſuperſtition. The crime for which they ſuffered, was that of creating ulcers and ſores on the bodies of their enemies, by means of certain incantations, and particularly by ſcarifying the correſponding parts of a doll, which they were ſaid to preſerve with much care for the diabolical myſteries of witchcraft. The witches appeared with theſe deadly engines

* Not having had it in my power, however, to viſit it as extenſively as I could have wiſhed, I will readily admit that my knowledge of this kingdom muſt be in many reſpects lame and imperfect.

of magic hanging round their necks; while their fellow-criminal wore each a kind of mitre, on the front of which was a label inſcribed with the names of their ſeveral offences. All puniſhments inflicted by this ghoſtly tribunal are regarded by the Mexicans as a ſervice peculiarly acceptable to the Deity, and therefore held in the higheſt veneration. Among the good and charitable offices we owe our neighbour, and recommended in the Spaniſh catechiſm, I took particular notice of one, which is that, not of perſuading him to embrace the truth, but of chaſtiſing him with ſtripes if he ſhould be found in error.

Upon my arrival here I found the atmoſphere moiſt and cold, but afterwards I was inclined to think it by no means unwholeſome; for though Mexico is ſurrounded by a lake, yet having a high ſituation in a mountainous country, the air ſeldom or never loſes its elaſticity. In this city I gave myſelf up wholly to recreation, and the enjoyment of thoſe innocent pleaſures which ſo happy a ſpot abundantly ſupplied. I lived, however, on a ſalutary diet, ſuch as roots,

vege-

vegetables, and European fruits, which are equally common in the gardens of Mexico with thoſe of its own continent. I was careful to uſe cooling draughts, conſiſting chiefly of water and the meal of Indian corn, which, after being boiled to a certain point, acquires the conſiſtency of chocolate, and is named by the Spaniards *atollé*.

I proceeded once more to viſit the curioſities of Mexico, the churches, palaces, public walks, the gardens of Almeyda, and the aqueduct and gardens of Tacuba. In the mean time the day of the galleon's ſailing from Acapulco, being the 25th, or at lateſt the 30th of March, was drawing near, and I began to be anxious for the arrival of my baggage, which I had delivered to the monk at Sartille. I had been three weeks at Mexico, when I received a letter from Queretano, informing me, that the Franciſcan had unluckily fallen ill, a circumſtance which would protract the arrival of my things for ſome time; but that, upon his recovery, they ſhould be forwarded with all poſſible diſpatch. Delay, however, was now impracticable without loſing the opportunity of

of the galleon; and therefore, rather than ſubmit to the riſk of ſo ſerious a diſappointment, I determined to leave them behind me. I deſired, however, a merchant of my acquaintance to ſell them as ſoon as they came to hand, and to remit whatever money they might yield, as a preſent to my good Indian of San Antonio. I was not a little diſſatisfied with the negligence of the monk; but in my preſent ſituation I had no alternative.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

Departure from the City of Mexico for Acapulco—the Author is reduced to the Neceſſity of travelling alone, and arrives at the Village of Cuernavaca—Trait of Humanity in a poor Indian—Arrival at the Port of Acapulco—its Trade—ſeveral Shocks of an Earthquake are felt during the Author's Stay—he embarks in a Galleon bound to the City of Manilla.

ON the 18th of March I ſet out, with no other companion than two mules, on the road to Acapulco; for the Spaniard I hired at Sartille, reſolving, it ſeems, that I ſhould not entertain a bad opinion of him without reaſon, had diſappeared ſoon after my arrival at Mexico with the horſe I purchaſed at Potoſi. I had engaged a French ſervant in his place, whom I found in indigent circumſtances; but after living at my expence for ſeveral days, he likewiſe choſe to abſcond the evening before my departure. My impatience to get to Acapulco was ſo

great, that, though entirely alone, I could not brook the delay of a moment longer. The roads, however, being broad, and much frequented, I did not find myſelf in any danger of loſing my way. After paſſing a cauſeway equally magnificent with that of Guadaloupe, I aſcended a very high hill, and ſlept amidſt the huts of Indians, who were employed in making charcoal from a wood of pines, at a place called Tchuſco. Next day, having travelled acroſs ſeveral ſmall ſtunted woods, I came to ſleep at the village of Cuernavaca, on the ſouth ſide of a hilly ridge; whence, when I awaked, I was delighted with the proſpect of gardens, interſperſed with pieces of water, and producing every kind of European as well as American fruit. As my road the following day lay over wild and barren mountains, with here and there a ſtraggling fir, it was conſiderably bleak and melancholy; in the little bottoms, however, the traveller obſerves ſmall plantations of the ſugar cane, which contribute in ſome degree to diverſify and enliven the ſcene. Deſcending from the heights I met an Indian under a load of

fruits and vegetables, on his way to Mexico; he had an aſs to accompany and aſſiſt him; but in pity to the fatigue and infirmities of his companion, his humane maſter had ſhifted the burden to his own ſhoulders, leaving his aged ſervant to walk before him at his eaſe; a cuſtom prevalent, I am told, all over the country. The two firſt days I enjoyed the company of the Indians, as they paſſed between the neighbouring villages; but at laſt I found myſelf under the neceſſity of hiring a guide from one place to another.

I left on the right the mines of Taſcou, or Real del Monte; and having ſlept at Cannobial, or the village of Reeds, on the fifth day of my departure from Mexico I paſſed a deep and rapid river, called Rio de las Balſas, or the River of Rafts, which are here made of the aromatic reed, kept afloat by means of gourd bottles. The flies riſe in ſuch ſwarms from this river, and are ſo extremely troubleſome, that the traveller finds it convenient to continue his journey during the night; here the road enters a ſeries of narrow vallies, and afterwards leading acroſs a very

a very difficult rivulet, I was obliged to hire a negro for my conductor. This African gave me a very early ſpecimen of his cunning and diſhoneſty; for we had no ſooner come to an obſcure part of the road, than he gave his horſe the ſpur, and ruſhed into a dark and narrow lane. I ſaw it was his intention to run off with one of my mules, which was tied behind him, and I paſſed him in a moment at full gallop. He was obliged to ſtop and apologiſe in the beſt manner he could, endeavouring to make me believe it an accident occaſioned by the unruly temper of his horſe. I rode cloſe by his ſide, however, during the remainder of our journey, holding my couteau-de-chaſſe ready to ſtrike upon the ſmalleſt appearance of a ſimilar accident; but he wanted courage to repeat an experiment which had ſucceeded ſo ill in the firſt attempt. I was now heartily ſick of my guide; and therefore, on our arrival at the firſt village, I gave him his diſcharge, and we parted, equally, I have no doubt, diſguſted with each other. Having entered a flat, but fertile and well-cultivated country, I came to a town called Chilpinſingo, which

which conſiſts entirely of Indians, with whom, except a very few Spaniards, this whole country is peopled. Hitherto the ſoil had produced only a ſmall quantity of oil, pitch, Indian corn, ſugar, cocoa, and fruit; but now all thoſe productions began to appear in abundance, whilſt the roads, extremely rugged, and in ſome places almoſt impaſſable among the mountains, became much leſs difficult. The climate was immoderately hot, and every tree on the road ſeemed alive with ſquirrels. Mexico receives a great part of its proviſions from this province, with a freſh aſſortment of oriental luxuries from Acapulco upon every arrival of the galleon.

The dreſs of the Indians, and manners of the country, are nearly the ſame as in the more northern parts of the kingdom, except that here they have a kind of reed grating, inſtead of walls, to their houſes, as a precaution againſt the intemperate heat of the ſun. I purſued my way to Rio Papagallos or Perroquet River, and put up at the houſe of a good Indian, who received me with much hoſpitality. Next morning, as there re-

remained now only twenty leagues to Acapulco, I was reſolved to accompliſh them without ſleeping. I travelled ten alone; but the road turning in among the mountains which overlook Acapulco, I reſted two hours at a little village, and took a guide for the enſuing night. We had proceeded half way in our journey, when my guide becoming extremely tired, and earneſtly deſiring a little reſpite, though his maſter was amply paid for his attendance the whole way to Acapulco, I was obliged to leave him on the road, and travel alone. Having learned that a meſſenger with the galleon's laſt diſpatches from the viceroy of Mexico had paſſed two days before, and obſerving that the loſs of one hour might prove fatal to my intended voyage, I would on no account whatever ſubmit to delay. But I was now in a narrow path, intricate and much incumbered with large ſtones, and therefore found myſelf under the neceſſity of proceeding with caution. Beſides, I was apprehenſive of loſing myſelf in the dark; but having learned from experience that the mule always keeps in the beaten path, I laid the bridle on his neck,

neck, and left him entirely to his own diſcretion. A little after one in the morning I reached the top of a very high mountain, where, to my infinite joy, I began to hear the breakers on the weſtern ſhore; and gave thanks to that merciful Providence which had conducted me in ſafety to the end of a very painful and arduous journey. My deſcent from the mountain preſenting me with a view of the wide ocean, I again fell upon my knees, and adored Heaven for the enchanting proſpect of the ſhip and element below me; a proſpect, the very idea of which had ſupported my ſtrength and ſpirits in many a difficult and diſmal ſituation. At length, at ſix in the morning, after travelling a hundred leagues ſouth-ſouth-weſt from Mexico, and eight hundred from New Orleans, I arrived at the port of Acapulco, which the natives name Portou, or, by way of eminence, the Port.

Acapulco is a miſerable little town, which, however, is dignified with the name of city; and, being ſurrounded with volcanic mountains, its atmoſphere is conſtantly thick and unwholeſome. The inhabitants are few, and

almoſt entirely Africans. The harbour is ſafe, beautiful, and extenſive. Beſides its being the ordinary port for the Manilla galleon, it uſed to be frequented by Peruvian veſſels, which came hither to buy pitch and tar, as well as the different commodities of China and Europe. This trade, however, the company of Lima thought proper, ſome time ſince, entirely to aboliſh. The inhabitants are now become totally idle, and deſtitute of every ſpecies of traffic; and hence the fair pearls, which, with a little induſtry, might be obtained from their own coaſts, as well as thoſe of California, lie wholly neglected. The town ſtands on a bay north-weſt from the road, formed by the curvature of the coaſt, and a ſmall promontory, on which is an old fort in miſerable repair. Ships may ride at anchor two cables length from the ſhore, and be ſheltered from the ſtorm by a point of land ſituated under the fort. There is another little bay in the ſouth-eaſt quarter under a mountainous ſtrip of land, which ſeparates and protects the road from the open ſea. This ſtation is ſtill ſafer than the former,

and

and therefore frequented by ſuch veſſels as have occaſion to winter at Acapulco. There is, beſides, without the road, and about half a league from the town, a creek of conſiderable capacity, which I imagine might afford good harbour for ſhipping, at leaſt during the fine ſeaſon. The road of Acapulco is about three leagues in breadth, but the entrance to it is too wide to be fortified completely.

Sonſonate, Acapulco, Matanchel, and San Joſeph, are the only ports frequented by the Spaniards on this part of the South ſea. Sonſonate is the port of the Peruvian veſſels which reſort thither for the purpoſe of buying pitch and wood; Acapulco of the Manilla galleon, which imports all ſorts of Indian and Chineſe commodities, and returns with their value in ſpecie; Matanchel is a mart for the trade of California; and San Joſeph is little more than a watering-place for the Manilla ſhip at her firſt arrival on the coaſt of New Spain or California.

During the time I ſojourned here we had three ſhocks of an earthquake. As it was my conſtant practice to live in one of the

houſes, and conform myſelf to the manners of the Indians, I happened to be lying on the floor, and in a moment of drowſineſs preceding ſound ſleep, which however is compatible with the conſciouſneſs of external motion, when I perceived the ground to tremble under me, and heard a noiſe like the rattling of a heavy carriage over the rough pavement of a narrow lane. In my reverie I fancied myſelf ſtill at Mexico, which is kept in a ſtate of conſtant tremour by the vaſt concourſe of coaches and other carriages; but I could not account for the violent impreſſion they made on the walls of the houſe. Such was the reaſoning of my clouded faculties, when I was completely awaked by the ſcreams of women and children, who ran about in the ſtreets crying, pouring forth prayers to the Almighty, and exclaiming in one voice, Ave Maria! Ave Maria Santiſſima! I was then no longer at a loſs to account for the tremulous motion I had felt; and I obſerved that the noiſe, ſtill heard at times in the direction of the mountains, was always ſucceeded by a ſhock, which appeared to me nothing more than the diffuſion of its vibrations.

tions. The eruption of a volcano contained in the bowels of a mountain, produces, I preſume, a concuſſion in the contiguous parts of the earth, whoſe vibrations, extending to a greater or leſs diſtance according to the quantity and activity of the volcanic matter, we denominate a ſhock.

The principal part of the galleon's cargo having been forwarded to Mexico, the annual fair of Acapulco, which happens at this ſeaſon, was confined to the little articles of a few pedlars, who had been uſed to ſupply the officers and clerks in the Chineſe trade with certain neceſſaries for the voyage. We had three millions of piaſtres on board, partly deſtined to purchaſe the galleon's next cargo, and partly to defray the expences of government in the Phillipine Iſles. In ſhort, having ſeen no fewer than a hundred paſſengers embark, at leaſt forty of whom were monks, I went on board the galleon.

CHAP. XIX.

Departure from the Road of Acapulco—confuſed State of the Galleon, and the motley Crew aſſembled on Board her—Anchorage near the Iſland of Guam—Population of this Iſland—its natural Productions and Animals—Deſcription of the Inhabitants—the Galleon quits her Anchorage—encounters a violent Storm—ſeeks Shelter in the Road of the Iſland of Samar—Deſcription of the Champan, an Indian Veſſel of a curious Structure.

WE ſailed from the road of Acapulco, on our paſſage to Manilla, the 2d of April 1768, with the wind in the north-weſt, ſteering towards the S. and S. S. W. It is neceſſary to have had the mortification of taking a paſſage in a Spaniſh galleon, to have an idea of the horrid confuſion which now preſented itſelf; and yet I was aſſured our preſent condition was, in every reſpect, quiet and orderly, compared with the crowded and tumultuous plight of this veſſel on her laſt

laſt voyage from Manilla. Though of only five hundred tons, ſhe carried, beſides the ſhip's company, convicts, monks, women, merchants, officers, civil and military, with a large detachment of clerks. The emoluments of an officer in the ſervice of the galleon, excluſive of the advantages of trade, are very conſiderable; and his place, ſaleable at the end of each voyage, is often veſted in a perſon who has not the ſmalleſt pretenſions to the character of a ſailor. The pilots alone are entruſted with navigating the ſhip, and have the rank of major in the king's ſervice. I found it was a regulation on board, that each perſon ſhould lay in his own water and ſtores, and eat apart by himſelf. The crew were not even provided with a common kettle, whilſt ſome individuals had one each for his own particular uſe. As each common ſailor on board the galleon was allowed a couple of ſervants to attend him, our domeſtics were more numerous than their maſters, and being without all order and diſcipline, gave occaſion to intolerable uproar. Not having had it in my power to purchaſe proviſions for my paſſage at Acapulco, ſome

days after our departure I made an agreement, in conſequence of which I meſſed with one of the pilots.

Having reached the thirteenth degree of latitude, we ſtood W. and S. W. with a faint breeze at E. and E. N. E. ſcarcely ſufficient to fill our ſails, but which, notwithſtanding, being ſteady, we made conſiderable way. In theſe regions, as at Acapulco, the horizon is conſtantly hazy, and the heat of the atmoſphere cloſe and oppreſſive. We had frequent lightning during the night, accompanied with loud claps of thunder. Having arrived at the tenth degree of northern latitude, we continued our courſe, varying between the ninth and eleventh, and were upwards of fifteen days without touching a ſail. The wind, freſhening a little in the ſame quarter of the eaſt, the ſky became perfectly ſerene, and the rate of our going was accelerated, with the fineſt weather, and the moſt beautiful ſea in the world.

On the 15th of May we obſerved flying-fiſhes, with wings of a reddiſh colour, whereas the wings of ſuch as I had hitherto met with were of a duſky white. On the 20th

we

we ſaw ſeveral kinds of ſea-fowls ; and from the 20th to the 30th we were admoniſhed by thunder, lightning, and flocks of ſmall birds, to be on our guard againſt certain rocks and ſand-banks ſituated about four hundred leagues eaſt of the Marian, or Ladrone iſlands.

Standing for ſome days between the twelfth and thirteenth degree, on the 9th of June, with the wind always E. and E. N. E. we diſcovered mountains in the E. N. E. of the iſland Guam. This is the only one of the Marian iſles on which the Spaniards have a ſettlement ; and their new governor being in the galleon, we came to anchor the following day, ſouth of the iſland, in thirty fathoms water. We lay at the diſtance of a cannon-ſhot from land, oppoſite to a ſmall fort, and a village of Indians. This fort is only three leagues from the principal town, which is the ordinary reſidence of the governor, as well as of the greater part of the inhabitants. It is of ſome extent, and ſtands on the border of a little river, at the mouth of which is a road for ſhipping, tolerably ſafe during the ſummer months. The place, however,

however, where we dropped anchor, being protected from the north-weſt winds, which, as the rains had begun to fall, were now prevalent, we deemed ſtill more ſecure. In the E. and N. E. we ſaw a little iſland covered with cocoa-trees, and ſeparated from the main land by a large ſhoal of a whitiſh colour. It had been uſual to ſend a veſſel from Manilla to this iſland once in two or three years; but owing to ſome accident it was now eight ſince the inhabitants had ſeen a ſtranger on ſhore.

The natives of Guam are tall and well made; and, as far as one is warranted to judge from the expreſſion of the face, are of an open and generous character. It was here I firſt met with the cuſtom of chewing betel, which is the leaf of a ſhrub of the ſame name. This leaf, when ſmeared over with ſlaked lime, and wrapped round a parcel of a ſpecies of nutmeg obtained from a tree named *areca*, is put in the mouth, and after being chewed for ſome time produces an irritation on the palate, and a reddiſh ſaliva. It affords the Indian a very ſenſible degree of pleaſure; and the uſe of it to many in

thoſe regions becomes equally neceſſary as ſnuff to an European. The coarſe and ſenſual among the people mix it up with tobacco, opium, and other rank drugs: but in the mouth of the Indian this compoſition exhales a very grateful odour, which he has much ſatisfaction in imparting to his companions; and when a woman chuſes to favour her admirer with a portion of her maſticated betel, he receives it as a pledge of peculiar complacency and friendſhip. For my part, beſides its extreme heat and pungency on the palate, and the diſguſting effect of perpetually ſpitting a kind of reddiſh viſcous matter, it never gave me the ſmalleſt pleaſure, nor do I believe I ſhould ever be able to acquire the habit of uſing it. We met here with an excellent kind of brandy, manufactured from the fermented juice of the cocoa-tree. I remember to have ſeen brandy equally good in New Spain, made from the juice of a ſpecies of aloes, whoſe fibres are ſtrong and uſeful to the natives for the purpoſe of thread.

The natives of the Phillippine Iſles pretend, that the inhabitants of Guam, and the other

other Marian Iſlands, are originally deſcended in colonies from them; an opinion which I think by no means improbable. The Indians on this iſland may be computed at about ten thouſand, and are diſtributed into ſeven or eight villages. The ſoil is extremely fertile, producing rice, Indian corn, and vegetables in abundance. There are ſome cows, plenty of poultry, and many different kinds of fruit. The only ſpecies, however, of this laſt, which I was not acquainted with before, is in this country named *rima*,* or the fruit of the bread-tree. The bread-fruit is between five and ſix inches in diameter, has a rough ſkin like the coarſeſt ſhagreen, and conſiſts internally of a yellowiſh ſubſtance, which the Indians prepare for their uſe by boiling, and afterwards roaſting on the embers. The bread-tree, the cocoa, and fig-bannan, are common in the woods of Guam; and the face of the country preſents numberleſs beautifully diverſified landſcapes, conſiſting of lawns, high woody hills, and vallies in excellent cultivation. The prin-

* At Tinian, near Guam, Anſon and his crew lived ſeveral weeks on the fruit of the rima.—See his Voyages.

cipal

cipal town, at the diſtance of four leagues in the country, is ſituated on the north-weſt of the iſland, on the border of a conſiderable river, at the mouth of which ſhips may anchor, but the road is by no means one of the beſt.

Having taken in freſh water and proviſions, and received the late governor on board; we again put to ſea on the 15th of June, and as it was now the ſeaſon of the periodical rains, we quitted Guam with little regret. We ſtood weſt and a quarter north-weſt, with a gentle breeze from the eaſt, but on the 25th the wind changed to the north, accompanied with frequent calms. We had hitherto enjoyed an excellent paſſage, and were now only an hundred leagues from the Phillippine Iſles; but here the ſky became ſuddenly overcaſt, and the weather rough and tempeſtuous. On the 30th the wind blew with increaſing violence, the ſqualls became more frequent, and the atmoſphere appeared every where loaded with black lowering clouds. Early on the 8th of July the wind ſhifted to the ſouth, and for the ſpace of ſeven days blew a furious ſtorm, in the

the courſe of which we loſt a part of our rudder, and ſuffered in other reſpects conſiderable damage. On other occaſions, I have been expoſed to winds of equal violence, but in my experience as a ſeaman I never ſaw them convulſe the elements in the ſame ſublimely great and awful manner. On the 27th the ſtorm abated, and the weather clearing up, we found we had been carried greatly to the northward of our courſe. Having regulated our courſe in the beſt manner we could, conſidering the ſtate of the atmoſphere, on the 24th we diſcovered land, which we took for the iſland Samar, where it borders on the ſtreights of San Juannico. It was now a month ſince we had been able to take an obſervation of the ſun; and we perceived we were conſiderably to the ſouth of Cape Spiritu Santo, after which we intended to have directed our courſe. Upon our approaching land we had at one time a dead calm, at another a perfect ſtorm, the current meanwhile hurrying us rapidly towards the ſouth-ſouth-weſt. The weather becoming again violently tempeſtuous, we were obliged to ſtand out to ſea, and contend

with

with a ſecond ſtorm; which, however, laſted only five days, and was in no reſpect to be compared with the former. Having at length come in view of Cape Spiritu Santo, we made towards the ſhore: and as the boiſterous weſt winds now prevailed, and we were ſtill a hundred leagues from Manilla, acroſs a dangerous Archipelago, it was thought unadviſeable to attempt this navigation ſo late in the ſeaſon. It was therefore reſolved to put in and winter on the iſland Samar; and accordingly, on the 1ſt of Auguſt, having entered a ſpacious road formed by three iſlands at the mouth of a river which is named Palapa, from an adjacent village, we came to an anchor in ſeven fathoms water.

The landing-place at Cape Spiritu Santo, is to be diſtinguiſhed by means of a high flat-topped mountain, which appears in the weſt of it, and is named *Menſa*, or the Table of Palapa. Here the land recedes from the eye towards the place where we moored, which is about ſix leagues weſt from the cape. As the ſhip approaches the ſhore, the pilot may obſerve a cluſter of little hills

in

in the ſhape of ſugar-loaves on the main land, and cloſe to the iſland Quiprau, the moſt eaſtward of the three above mentioned. The The iſland Cagayagan is ſituated to the weſt, and that of Lawan to the ſouth of it, and conſequently nearer the main land. Between Quiprau and the ſhore is the north-eaſt mouth of the Palapa, which is indeed the wideſt; but, beſides being deficient in depth of water, it is much embarraſſed with many dangerous rocks. It is therefore adviſeable to go on, keeping the land at the diſtance of three leagues; and as ſoon as you have paſſed the iſland Quiprau, the proper entrance to the road opens to view. Two prominent points, however, extending from theſe iſlands in ſunk rocks and ſand-banks about a league into the ſea, which may be ſeen from the maſt's head, ſometimes of a light, and ſometimes of a dark colour, render it neceſſary to ſtretch a little more to the north-eaſt. Steering ſouth-ſouth-eaſt, you will preſently enter between the two iſlands, then keep the cape immediately over a little uninhabited iſland, which is uſed as a burying-ground by the Indians. Here

the

the ſhip enters a noble road, four leagues in length and two in breadth; but if it is her purpoſe to winter at Samar, ſhe ought to proceed to the ſouth-eaſt mouth of Palapa, where ſhe will lie in equal ſecurity as in any harbour in the world. The watering place is ſouth from the entrance, and upon the iſland Lawan, the only one of the three that is inhabited.

The firſt refreſhments we received from this iſland we might be properly ſaid to devour; for as ſoon as it began to blow we were reduced to the ſhort allowance of five ounces of biſcuit, and a ſmall portion of rain-water, which was corrupted by the waves breaking over the ſhip and mixing with our ſtores during the ſtorm. As we were entirely uncertain, in caſe we ſhould miſs the road of Palapa, of the duration of our paſſage, the galleon's company found it their intereſt as well as duty to acquieſce in this diminution of their ſubſiſtence. But this country, ſo abundant in every good thing, ſoon effaced the remembrance of all thoſe dangers and hardſhips from which we had juſt eſcaped. The galleon was now

ſurrounded with numberleſs canoes, mingled with little veſſels named champan, which contained a plentiful ſupply of proviſions from Samar.

The champan is a veſſel in uſe among theſe Indians, as well as the inhabitants of the whole coaſt which borders on the Chineſe gulph, I mean from China to the kingdom of Malacca, and from Sumatra to the iſlands of Japan. It is ſhort, broad, and very high, having one maſt towards the head, and another towards the ſtern. The rudder made hollow, to prevent its being heavy and unwieldy, has more ſurface than that of a hundred and twenty gun ſhip. Little cots of bamboo appear in three diviſions on deck, but diſpoſed in ſuch a manner as to leave a clear ſpace before each maſt. Theſe veſſels, however, the largeſt of which had three maſts, and was made to carry five hundred tons, are much better ſailors than an European would be apt to imagine. The natives of theſe iſlands are ſtill ſtrangers to the uſe of flags, and content themſelves with a ſort of ſtreamer at the top of the main-maſt.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

The Author embarks in an Indian Canoe for Manilla—is driven to the beach of a barren Iſland to ſeek Shelter from a Storm—the Dreſs and Armour of the native Indians deſcribed—they exhibit a Sham Fight—he meets with a hoſpitable Reception from them—Arrival at Lawan—Deſcription of this Village, from whence the Author proceeds to Catarman.

WE were now riding ſafely at anchor in the mouth of the Palapa; and I began to think of proceeding by the moſt expeditious means in my power directly to Manilla. Had I been able to accompliſh my firſt idea, I ſhould have been obliged to travel thither chiefly by land. Upon inquiry I found that the weſtern point of Samar is ſeparated from the eaſt coaſt of Luconia only by a ſtrait of five leagues; and there being among the canoes which firſt joined the galleon, one belonging to the natives of a little iſland in the vicinity of this ſtrait, I propoſed to avail

myſelf of their contiguity to Luconia; an accordingly, having obtained leave to accompany them on their return, I embarked on board their canoe. This little bark was of a homely conſtruction, and by far too low in the timbers for the open ſea. A ſplit bamboo, whoſe two limbs united above, ſunk into a plank of wood faſtened to the boat, ſerved for maſts and ſhrouds. The ſail was a ſheet of leaves coarſely ſewed together; and the rigging had been made wholly from the bark of trees. A rude branch having two wooden claws, and in ſome degree ſhaped like our own, was in lieu of an anchor. The cables conſiſted of different ſhoots of the routan plant laid together, and bound or hooped, not bruiſed and twiſted like thoſe uſed by the Chineſe. A hand-ſpike, with a piece of board fixed to its end, performed the office of an oar. Four large bamboos, diſpoſed in the form of a picture-frame, and placed acroſs the canoe, were intended to regulate her motion; and a maſſy ſtone in each extremity of the hull ſerved for ballaſt. But ſtill this very ſimple piece of mechaniſm tended to the ſame purpoſe

as

as that of the moſt improved tranſport in Europe.

Having put off from the galleon, I began to reflect on my ſituation; and was extremely at a loſs whether I had moſt reaſon to admire or dread the rude induſtry of my companions. I got rid of my diſquietude as ſoon as poſſible, and at laſt became charmed with the novelty of the objects around me. We had reached the open ſea, and were rowing weſtward upon a point of land about the diſtance of two leagues, when we were all of a ſudden overtaken by a ſtorm: happily it was of ſhort continuance, but it ended in an abundant fall of rain, which in a few moments had almoſt filled the canoe. We baled her with all poſſible expedition; and eſcaped without ſuffering any other hardſhip, than that of being drenched to the ſkin; meanwhile our little bark went ſwiftly through the waves, and it was not long before we arrived at our intended haven.

Here we joined a number of canoes, and a crowd of Indians on the beach, who, like ourſelves, had been glad to make the beſt of their way from the violence of the gale.

Some of theſe ſavages had ſtripped off their ſhirts in order to preſerve them from the wet, and rolled up their large breeches above the loins; others were dreſſed in a ſort of bodice, deſcending from the arm-pits to the middle of the thigh, and a wide cloak, which ſerved as a covering to their ſhoulders. The whole of their dreſs was made from a ſort of ſtuff conſiſting of woody fibres, woven in the loom of nature, and found in their foreſts adhering to the bark of the cocoa-tree. On their heads was worn a round hat, reſembling the ſcale of a balance, only a little more convex. It was compoſed of nipe-leaves, attached by their twigs, as edging to the circumference of a hoop, in ſuch a manner that all their points united in the center. The ſkin of the routan twiſted into a fillet, and applied to the lower ſurface of the ſcale, embraced the head, and formed the crown of the hat. In ſhort, what with the freſh verdure of the hat, and the duſky brown colour and coarſe fabric of the cloak and bodice, preſenting in a ſcaly ſeries the arrangement of the various parts, theſe Indians might have paſſed

in

in a warm imagination for the Genii of the woods.

Their armour was a bad ſword or couteau-de-chaſſe, which is named *cris*, or *campilan*, and a long target, intended for the defence of the whole body. They now prepared to exhibit, by way of amuſement, a ſham fight, in which, as they evaded or repelled the blows of the enemy, they diſplayed a thouſand ſtrange contortions behind their ſhields. The retreat, as well as the aſſault, was accompanied by leaps and ſcreams of a moſt extraordinary and inhuman nature. The noiſe and tumult of the ſtorm ſeemed to inſpire them with an ecſtaſy of joy; for, having fixed their eyes on a cloud, whence had juſt iſſued a flaſh of lightning or peal of thunder, they ſet up a yelling and clamour, which probably denoted their triumph, but which were little calculated to excite ſimilar ſentiments in my breaſt. During all this time I ſat under a rock, where I had taken ſhelter from a heavy fall of rain, and opened my eyes wide to gaze on ſo wonderful a ſpectacle. A peculiar novelty in the appearance and behaviour of theſe ſa-

vages, joined to my total ignorance of their language, ſuſpended in ſome degree the uſual exerciſe of my faculties. I now awaked as from a dream, and aſked myſelf the meaning of thoſe enthuſiaſtic expreſſions of joy. Are they the wanton effuſions of cruel and barbarous diſpoſitions? or are they merely the idle and intemperate bluſter of levity and courage? I flattered myſelf I had been able to diſtinguiſh the peculiar ſymptoms of the latter, and began to be under leſs concern for my perſonal ſafety. Still, however, I could not help recollecting the jealouſy I had ſeen entertained of them by the galleon's company; a jealouſy which prevented their being admitted on board, except in very ſmall numbers, and which I found to originate in their ſuppoſed alliance with the wild Mahometans and ſavage Indians of the Phillippine Archipelago. Hitherto they had not deigned to take the ſmalleſt notice of me, and therefore I became afraid, leſt they ſhould be ſtill in a barbarous and wandering ſtate of ſavage life, and enemies to the Spaniards, and that all I had yet ſeen was only the prelude to a human ſacrifice.

By and bye, they were joined by others in leſs extraordinary apparel, who, after ſurveying me from head to foot, preſented me with a diſh of rice. My mind was ſtill in a ſtate of agitation, but in my preſent ſituation I had too much occaſion for a friend, not to take what was offered me with every poſſible expreſſion of gratitude.

This rice was dreſſed in a piece of bamboo, pierced in the manner of a ſieve, which, being covered with a lid, is incloſed in another of a larger ſize, and containing a certain quantity of water. The outer veſſel being made cloſe in like manner, the whole is placed over a ſlow fire; and as the water is abſorbed by the rice in the action of boiling, ſo the ſurface of the bamboo, which is applied to the fire, is prevented from being conſumed by the humidity it imbibes from within. Whenever they have occaſion for a fire, it is obtained by the ſimple method of rubbing two pieces of bamboo againſt one another.

The ſtorm abated, and we again embarked in our canoe, quitting a barren iſland, my ſhort abode on which made ſuch

an

an impreſſion on my mind, that at this moment it occurs to my recollection like a fairy tale. We proceeded weſtward, through a channel formed by this and another iſland nearer the main land; but though I ſaw many canoes paſſing and repaſſing between the galleon and the adjacent iſlands, I could not perceive a ſingle hut, nor the ſmalleſt veſtige of cultivation. Having paſſed a ſtrait lying between two points of theſe iſlands, we entered the main ſea, and coaſted weſtward. We were deterred from venturing to any conſiderable diſtance from land, by reaſon of the ſmall ſize and frail condition of our canoe; and this conſideration inducing us to keep near the breakers, we were at times in danger of being overſet by the waves. We rowed round a ſharp point of land, and ſaw through the trees, a village named Lawan, which, with a church and convent, is protected by a little fort erected on an eminence near the ſhore. The huts of the Indians were ſcattered over a neighbouring wood, which, from an extreme luxuriance of ſoil, was become thick and difficult of acceſs. Theſe Indian habi-

tations

tations I could compare to nothing with equal propriety as to ſo many bird cages; which being either ſquare and grated with the bamboo, or oblong and open to the day, were perched upon ſtakes; and, owing to the motion of the people within, in a conſtant ſtate of vacillation, which produced to the eye of a ſpectator the uſual effects of birds in a cage.

At landing I went to pay my reſpects to the pariſh prieſt, who was a jeſuit, as indeed at that time were all the eccleſiaſtics of theſe iſlands. He received me with ſome civility, and here I ate, for the firſt time, the eggs of a bird named *tabon*, which are as large as thoſe of a gooſe, though laid by an animal no bigger than a turtle-dove. When the female tabon is about to lay, ſhe makes a deep winding hole in the ſand, and having depoſited her egg, inſtantly fills it up, and ſmooths over the ſurface as before. In due time the heat of the ſun having hatched the eggs, the chicks begin to ſcratch their way towards the light; but as it often happens that in this effort they ſcratch either downward

ward or horizontally, they are ſuffocated in numbers in the ſand.

Departing from Lawan at ſun-ſet, in order to enjoy the calm of the evening, we rowed ſtill weſtward along the ſhore, directing our courſe to Catarman. My Indians were excellent rowers, and the canoe making good way, we proceeded twelve leagues before the dawn of the morning. I was, however, by no means at eaſe with reſpect to my companions; for though a ſtranger to their language, I could eaſily perceive that their converſation often had a reference to me; and at one time, under the colour of their uſual ſigns and geſtures, preſſing upon me with rude familiarity, they ſeemed, as I apprehended, to have a deſign upon my pockets. It is poſſible, however, that in the then feveriſh ſtate of my mind I may have miſinterpreted their deſigns; although they ſtill appear to me a little more than equivocal. Perſevering in my purpoſe of ſailing in the only veſſel which goes from Manilla to the harbour of Canton during the ſeaſon, I was prepared to meet with patience and conſtancy every ſpecies of danger. Soon af-

ter

ter my arrival at Catarman, I learned that in the courſe of the night we had made a providential eſcape; for near certain rocks, and at the preciſe hour we muſt have paſſed them, the Mahometan pirates had taken and pillaged three canoes, and carried their crews into captivity. This news was reported by a few of the hands, who, favoured by the obſcurity of the night, had been able to make their eſcape by ſwimming. I was beſides informed, that the Indians by whom I was accompanied were natives of *Capul*, an iſland which for a long time, without either prieſt or governor, had renounced every kind of intercourſe with Europeans. It was added, that theſe iſlanders not only afford an aſylum to Mahometans, but even aſſiſt them in committing depredations on their neighbours; and hence I conjectured that the enemy's having obſerved and recognized their companions, might be the true reaſon that we had not ſhared the unhappy fate of the other canoes.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

The Author is hoſpitably entertained at Catarman—the Coaſt is infeſted by Mooriſh Pirates—Return to Samar—Deſcription of this Iſland—harſh and deſpotic Government of the Jeſuit Miſſionaries.

AT Catarman I was lodged in the houſe of an eccleſiaſtic, who was of the ſame order with the former; and though I cannot ſay the reception I met with was uncivil, yet it was accompanied with a diſagreeable ſtatelineſs of manner. He was buſily employed in giving audience to his people, in ſettling their differences, and in preſcribing rules and regulations for the good order of his flock. Towards evening a boy, who appeared to be a domeſtic, requeſted that I would paſs into an adjacent room, and repoſe myſelf on the ſofa. I obeyed, and followed him; but we had no ſooner entered the apartment, than he took his leave, and locked the door behind him.

I pre-

I preſently heard much noiſe and buſtle of company in the parlour I had juſt quitted, and above all the voice of my friend the jeſuit; he having made an harangue, obliged certain perſons to make an apology to others, who, from the tremulous tone of their voices, ſeemed to have attained the infirmities of old age. His addreſs became ſtill more animated, while his queſtions generally terminated in the word *mangateau*, which, in the language of the natives, ſignifies *thing*. The ceremony ended in a ſevere caſtigation, the report of which was ſufficiently audible. The idea of the inquiſition inſtantly preſented itſelf to my mind, and I remained not a little confounded. At ſupper, however, in rendering ſome account of his judicial functions, he gave me an opportunity of inquiring whether the diſcipline he inflicted on his flock regarded matters of religion, or merely their temporal concerns. He aſſured me, and from the apparent candour of his character I am not inclined to queſtion his ſincerity, that it was nothing more than the exerciſe of civil police, and had

had no concern whatever with the objects of their belief.

Catarman in the language of Samar ſignifies cape or promontory; and this place being only fourteen leagues from Palapa, there ſtill remained eight or ten to Luconia. It was now my earneſt deſire to ſail directly to this iſland, but the ſtraits of San Bernardino, which I was neceſſarily to paſs, being infeſted by cruiſers belonging to the Mahometans and Indians of Mindanao, Holo, Borneo, Paragoa, and other places ſituated between the Phillippine and Molucca iſles, no perſon was to be found who would undertake to be my conductor. Here I diſmiſſed my Indians of Capul, for after the accounts I had juſt received of their countrymen, I would not venture to truſt myſelf longer in their hands. The very name of the Mahometans who infeſt the coaſts of the Biſſayan, as well as of thoſe of the Luconian iſles, ſeems to inſpire the Catholic Indians with extreme terror. Hence the pirates have the inſolence to appear on ſhore; and frequently carry off the inhabitants of Luconia from under the very walls

walls of Manilla without oppoſition. But beſides the imminent danger of falling into the hands of the ferocious Muſſelmen, I received many accounts, probably exaggerated, of the extreme difficulty of travelling by land from San Bernardino to the city of Manilla. This was repreſented as a journey of one hundred and fifty leagues, through a country which, in the preſent ſeaſon of the year, would ſcarcely be attempted by a native, who is commonly little ſcrupulous of purſuing his way up to the girdle in mire. It was alledged, as an additional aggravation, that in the whole of that country not a ſingle beaſt is to be found for the purpoſe of the ſaddle, except buffaloes, and they only in very few places. But on the other hand, if I were to wait the ſailing of the galleon in the end of winter, I ſhould renounce all hopes of going in the only veſſel which ſails from Manilla to Canton in the courſe of the ſeaſon. Such were the reflections which engaged my mind, when the ſentinels ſtationed on the cape, as well as the adjacent heights, gave notice by their bell-drums that the Mooriſh canoes were in view. The

bell-drum, better known perhaps in Europe by the name *tamtam*, conſiſts of a ſheet of metal about half an inch in thickneſs, and reſembles the *tambour-de-baſque*, only that the ſurface of the former has a ſmall ſpace in the middle, concave on one ſide and convex on the other; and though inaudible beyond the diſtance of four hundred paces, owing perhaps to the number of vibrations, its ſound is more univerſally diffuſed within thoſe bounds than would be that of a real bell. This inſtrument hangs ſuſpended from the neck, and is beaten on the convex ſide with a kind of drumſtick muffled in a ſlip of cloth. The appearance of the Mahometans, or Moors, as they are named by the Spaniards, at different times ſince my arrival, had excited much conſternation in the minds of the inhabitants; and now, having no option but to abandon my deſign of proceeding immediately to Manilla, after a ſhort ſtay on this iſland I returned to my friends at Palapa.

Upon my arrival at Samar, I found that, except the crew, not one perſon remained in the galleon, and, therefore, the village, which

which might conſiſt of a hundred houſes, was completely filled by the paſſengers. I was fortunate enough, however, to find tolerable accommodation, and was enabled to paſs my time on this iſland in a manner much to my liking. Palapa is ſituated on a river, as already mentioned, of the ſame name, at the diſtance of two leagues from the ſea; and the ſight of the galleon having attracted the Indians of Catarman, Lawan, Catuby, Ubi, and other villages to the extent of fifteen leagues, it was ſeen at preſent to great advantage.

On the ſouthern ſhore, oppoſite to the iſle of *Leyte*, ſtands the capital of the iſland, named *Cabalongua*, which is the reſidence of the governor, commonly the only lay Spaniard in Samar. I met with nothing particular in the productions of Cabalongua, except a ſpecies of St. Ignatius's bean, called in the language of the natives, *pepitas de Cabalongua*. The houſes of the inhabitants are conſtructed of the bamboo, and thatched with the leaves of the *nipe*, a ſhrub as common as it is uſeful in thoſe parts. The leaves, being doubled and ſewed to a ſmall

reed, are diſpoſed on the roof in imitation of European ſlating. The body of the building is raiſed to ſome height above the ground, and reſts on a floor of ſplit bamboos, the arrangement of which is ſo contrived as to have the appearance of a cloſe grating. One object of this floor is to permit a circulation of air, as well as the eſcape of vapours exhaled from the ſoil; circumſtances of great benefit to the health of the inhabitants.

From the arrival to the ſailing of the galleon my time was chiefly ſpent at Catarman, Lawan, or Palapa, which, like all the other villages in thoſe iſlands, have each a little fortreſs, including the church, in order that upon the firſt appearance of the Moors, the inhabitants, with their moſt valuable effects, may reſort thither for ſafety.

The natives, eſpecially ſuch as reſide on the ſea coaſt, were formerly Mahometans; but the miſſionary Jeſuits having converted them to the religion and allegiance of Spain, now exerciſe over them an authority almoſt unlimited. For the moſt trivial offences, infants, children, men, women, old and young,

young, without diſtinction of rank, age, or ſex, are ſubjected to the diſcipline of the whip; and the aſcendency acquired by the clergy over the minds of the people in their reſpective pariſhes is ſuch, that the Indian, after receiving his puniſhment with humble ſubmiſſion, thanks the Jeſuit for his good offices, and departs fully ſatisfied of the neceſſity of a baſtinado, which nothing but a zeal for his welfare could have induced the prieſt to inflict. The cenſure of the church is in general attended with real penitence on the part of the offender; who, as I was aſſured, is rarely known to relapſe into the ſame fault. Puniſhment is always executed in public; and every one being aware that from human frailty he is equally liable to diſcipline, flagellation ſtamps no diſgrace on the character of the delinquent. The Jeſuits are at great pains to inſtruct the people in matters of religion; and hence, beſides the ordinary feſtivals of the church, two days of the week are ſet apart for divine ſervice, in which the Indian celebrates the praiſes of his Creator with ſuch melody, unction, and ingenuous ſimplicity, as beſtow real ſubli-

mity on the exercises of his devotion. I was present at the parochial feast, which was observed with much apparent piety by the Indians, though in a manner consonant to the genius of the Spaniards. In the morning the banners of the Virgin, St. Ignatius, and St. Francis, were displayed from the bastions of the castle, and saluted at the rising and setting of the sun by a discharge of artillery. On this occasion it had been formerly customary to give the Indians a ball in the church, but this religious dance having been found to terminate sometimes in irregularities, it was now abolished.—I return to the character of the parochial clergy.

The Jesuit, by means of confession, has access to the most secret thoughts of the Indian, who, in the simplicity of his heart, submits, not only his offences, but every thing that is either the object of his hope or fear, to the ear of his pastor. Advice and admonition on the part of the priest, are always accompanied with some small present, consisting of wine, medicine, liquor, or animal food; and thus, by min-

gling kindneſs with ſeverity, and rewards with puniſhment, the natives are gradually reclaimed from their ignorance and miſconduct. Like good children, they learn to regard the miſſionary as one ſent from Heaven to conduct them, by the paths of peace and innocence, to temporal as well as eternal happineſs. He acquires in their minds all the rights and conſequence of an earthly parent, whom nature authorizes to eſtabliſh the principles of virtue and good order in his family. Hence, in ſituations of common danger, he is their leader by ſea and land; and, on account of his ſuperior wiſdom and courage, is looked up to as a ſtrong tower againſt the invaſion and inroads of the Mahometans. It is the prerogative of each miſſionary in his own pariſh to iſſue orders for building or repairing the fort, for providing it with cannon and ammunition, and for the conſtruction of war-canoes, which he frequently commands in perſon. He appoints all ſubordinate officers, preſides over the diſcipline of the militia, regulates the number of guards, and even directs the ſentinel to his proper poſt. Laſtly, the clergy

of Samar are the friends as well as the paſtors, the temporal as well as the ſpiritual leaders of their flock; and among them I was unable to diſcover either the imperious bigot, or the low Levite who earns the emoluments of his profeſſion by a ſtudied accommodation of his life to the taſte and humour of his ſuperiors.

I am no friend to the exorbitant power of the church; but whatever be the ultimate views of monaſtic policy, good perhaps, in ſome reſpects, and bad in others, I muſt ſay, that on this iſland it ſeems to have a happy influence on the real intereſts of the people. The maxims the jeſuits obſerve in their conduct here, ſeem, in matters both of a civil and ſpiritual nature, much to reſemble thoſe exerciſed by their brethren in the miſſions of Paraguay; though the product of the people's induſtry being permitted to remain in their own hands, and at their own diſpoſal, is a circumſtance much to the credit of the former. I cannot conclude my encomium on theſe men, without obſerving, that in a ſituation where the extreme attachment of the natives to their paſtors

tors might with little encouragement have given occaſion to all the evils of violence and inſurrection, I ſaw them meet the edict for the abolition of their order with the deference due to civil authority, but at the ſame time with a ſtrength and firmneſs of mind truly manly and heroic. There now only remain in the dominions of Spain the jeſuits of the Marian iſles, whom we had no authority to moleſt; and in America, thoſe of California, whom the natives, under different pretences, had hitherto contrived to retain in the country. As to ſuch as were formerly ſcattered over the other parts of New Spain, they had long ſince taken their paſſage for Europe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Productions and natural Hiſtory of Samar, and the other Phillipine Iſlands—various Particulars reſpecting the Inhabitants.

IN this iſland the ſoil is extremely fertile, eaſily cultivated, and rewards the induſtry of the huſbandman at leaſt forty fold. Beſides other grain, the Indians ſow a conſiderable quantity of rice, which is wholly intended for the uſe of the parochial clergy, the ſettlement of Manilla, and the governor of the province. The common food of the natives conſiſts chiefly in a ſpecies of potatoe, yams, and a root named *gaby*. Agreeably to the example of the Indians, I lived entirely on roots, whoſe ſaccharine taſte is more pleaſant than the uniform inſipidity of boiled rice. At firſt they ſeemed heavy and flatulent, but ſoon became familiar to my ſtomach; and I was convinced in the end that they are more nutritive to the body, as well as more reliſhing to the taſte. I had likewiſe for my conſumption a good deal of pork, which

which is ſmaller, and runs more in filaments than our's. This fleſh, though black, and conſiſting of ſtrong fibres, like thoſe of the ox, is much ſweeter, and by no means difficult of digeſtion. The Indian has a ſurpriſing dexterity at diſcovering the tabon's neſt, and is ſometimes ſo lucky as to light upon no fewer than forty in one hoard; but from the ſhort experience I had of this aliment, I thought it heavy and indigeſtible. From the ſap of the cocoa, nipe, and cabonegro-trees, they obtain the materials for an excellent ſpecies of brandy. The laſt of theſe owes its name to the black colour of its fibres, which are manufactured by the natives into cables, and different kinds of cordage. Another article of Indian food is the ſubſtance of the cocoa-nut, which is eaten in the firſt ſtage of congelation; for after it becomes ſolid, and acquires, in ſome degree, the taſte of a freſh almond, it ceaſes to be equally digeſtible.

The only inſtrument uſed by the Indian, either for the purpoſes of war or induſtry, is a *couteau-de-chaſſe*, named, as is above mentioned, cris, or campilan; an inſtrument which,

which, after ſerving him againſt the enemy, enables him to cut down the largeſt tree of the wood, to be formed into a canoe, or ſplit into deals for more ordinary uſes. When the campilan has been ſo much worn as to be of little farther ſervice, it is ſtill employed by the women to grub up a light ſoil, in which they plant yams, potatoes, and other roots. In the ſpace of two months theſe are dug up in a ſtate of maturity, and of a wonderful ſize, inſomuch that within the compaſs of eighty yards the Indian finds his annual ſupply of theſe articles for the maintenance of a numerous family.

Sugar-canes, cabbages, garlic, onions, melons, Chineſe-oranges, lemons, vegetables, and, though in ſmall quantity, ſeveral other kinds of fruit, little known in Europe, are cultivated on this iſland. It abounds in figs, of which I reckoned no fewer than thirteen or fourteen different ſpecies, with a great variety of perfumes. The natives are inſtructed to give particular attention to the culture of the cocoa-tree, which grows here to an uncommon ſize. Their woods produce the *pamplemous*, a ſpecies of orange nearly five

five inches in diameter, pepper, honey, and wax. Indeed, all theſe iſlands are eminently diſtinguiſhed by the labours of the bee; and hence, I have ſeldom made an excurſion into the woods without meeting with numbers of bee-hives, ſuſpended in the form of oblong gourds from the branches of trees.

The bounty of Nature to Samar is no leſs viſible in the variety and excellence of its game. The woods ſwarm with birds of almoſt every deſcription, particularly the common fowl, which is diſtinguiſhed, however, from our's by the ſhortened proportions of her body and legs. The colour of the hen is grey, with feathers ſpotted like a partridge. There are three different ſpecies of turtle-dove; the firſt grey, and as large as a pullet; the ſecond ſeems, however, to be only a dwarfiſh breed of the firſt; the third is green, and when prepared for the table affords a delicious food. I met with a bird, peculiar, I believe, to theſe iſlands, named calao, as large as a gooſe, and agreeable to the taſte, but extremely ſhy and difficult of approach. He frequents low fenny grounds, perches

perches on the talleſt trees, and flits through the air with ſingular rapidity. This bird may be diſtinguiſhed by a large red oblong crown, which ſeems to be of the ſame ſubſtance with, and indeed only a continuation of his bill. This ornament, added to his ſize, gives him a majeſtic air. The feathers are black, mixed with a duſky red. I had the good fortune to obtain a very beautiful head of the calao, which I had the honour to preſent to the academy of ſciences at Paris. The parroquet, cockatoo, and another pretty little ſpecies of the ſame genus, no larger than a linnet, are ſurpriſingly plenty. There is alſo found here a very ſmall bird of the diminutive ſize of a waſp, whoſe colours, conſiſting in a ſhade of yellow, mixed with red and blue, are peculiarly vivid and beautiful. Many kinds of monkies, one of which is remarkably large, roe-bucks, wild buffaloes, and other quadrupeds, abound in the woods. I was told a great deal concerning the difference of ſize; and peculiar qualities of their ſerpents, but I confeſs I ſaw none either ſo extremely large, or ſurpriſingly ſmall,

ſmall, as to juſtify the reports of the natives.

In theſe favoured iſles, Nature ſeems to have been providently mindful of the cloathing, as well as of the ſubſiſtence of the inhabitants. The foot of a tall ſpecies of the *fig-bannan* conſiſts of numberleſs folds of bark, which, at a certain period of putrefaction, are ſeparable without art or difficulty. Theſe pieced together afford a ſpecies of fine linen, harſh indeed, and diſagreeable to the ſkin, in its natural ſtate, but which they have learned to render ſufficiently ſoft and pliable by a preparation of lime. Beſides ſerving for linen, it is likewiſe uſeful for the purpoſes of cordage.

Man, laſtly, is fed, cloathed, and lodged, in Samar at little toil, either of mind or body. The rivers are every where ſhaded with the bamboo, and the woods ſupply him with the nipe and routan, two ſhrubs which are made to anſwer all the purpoſes of nails; and ſuch is the dexterity of the Indians in uniting the different pieces of bamboo, that in the whole conſtruction of his hut neither iron nor any other metal is to be found.

Two

Two months induſtry in the courſe of the year ſuffices to provide for the wants of the people, whoſe innocent and gentle manners are to me the ſtrongeſt proof of the real happineſs they enjoy.

The deportment of the men is eaſy, open, and affable; the women are gay and lively, and poſſeſs in ſome degree the flippancy of the coquette, without, however, being inclined to vice. The Indian has little propenſity to labour, but he cannot be accuſed of avoiding it when any emergency renders it expedient. Vanity and lying are the only immoralities I could diſcover among them; and, though I have not found them prone either to jealouſy or theft, they ſeemed, however, conſiderably keen in their dealings with Europeans. I am diſpoſed to believe that the Indian poſſeſſes a ſenſibility of mind particularly nice and delicate, having obſerved in the exerciſe of his friendſhips a warmth and openneſs of heart which I have not diſcovered in an equal degree in any other people.

The common ſalute between the ſexes, and of affection among relations, is here preceded

preceded by a gentle aſpiration of incenſe on that part of the face to which the lips are meant to be applied. The Biſſayan Indians in general diſcover a natural taſte for muſic, and a genius for the mechanic arts; and I am convinced that nothing but want of education prevents their attaining a high degree of eminence in theſe purſuits. The flexibility of their nerves and muſcles may, perhaps, ſcarcely be credited; but the fact is, that they handle ſmall objects with their feet with equal eaſe and dexterity as we do with our hands; and can exert a force in pinching with their toes, not leſs than that of an European when he pinches with his fingers. With the aſſiſtance of his campilan alone, the Indian makes his violin or guitar, cuts down the largeſt tree in the foreſt, and and ſhapes and hollows it into the form of a canoe. At one time it is uſed to carve on the bamboo deſigns of no mean effect, for the ornament of his houſe; at another, it is turned againſt the enemy for perſonal defence. This, in ſhort, ſeems to be the only edged tool known, or at leaſt in uſe, among the Indians of Samar.

Among their productions of art, the Indian mat merits particular notice: it is a ſpecies of manufacture of ſuch fineneſs, that a piece of ſix feet went eaſily into my pocket. It is executed in various handſome deſigns, and painted with very lively and elegant colours, which they have the art of extracting from different trees.

Silk, cotton, and the fibres of the fig-bannan above-mentioned, furniſh the Indian with the raw materials for his beſt manufactures in cloth. He makes a kind of lace, and embroiders his ſilk ſtuffs with ſurpriſing elegance and addreſs. Every family is provided with a loom, for domeſtic purpoſes. At ſea the Indian is a ſhip's carpenter, a ſail-maker, and a caulker; on land, a rope-maker, and a ſhip-builder: but though he exerciſes occaſionally almoſt all the mechanic arts for his amuſement or convenience, he is never found to confine himſelf to one of them, excluſively of the reſt. I was informed, but with what degree of certainty I will not pretend to affirm, that even the art of writing with a kind of pencil on the

the leaves of the cocoa-tree, once exiſted in this iſland.

They have a cuſtom, implied in the word *maſſarer*, of cracking the joints, and rubbing the fleſh all over the body, which, as they conceive, tends to promote the free circulation of the blood, and obviate humours. That of rubbing the limbs of children with oil is likewiſe common; uſages which, as they are not peculiar to them, but prevalent over the whole continent of Aſia, may be preſumed to have long been found to have a ſalutary effect. In place of cupping they uſe ſevere pinchings on the neck and ſhoulders, which they continue to exerciſe until they are ſatisfied they have attained their end. They let blood by means of inciſions made in the ſkin; and as to phyſic, they are wonderfully verſant in the virtues of many flowers, balms, and plants, the uſe and application of which they owe to nature and their own experience alone.

Large trowſers, which deſcend below the calf of the leg, a ſhirt falling over them to the middle of the thigh, and a handkerchief twiſted round the head in the manner of a

turban, conſtitute their ordinary dreſs. On occaſions of ceremony they appear in their round hat, and banyan or a bedgown, conſiſting of ſilk and cotton. Thick ſhort fingers, and long nails on the middle, and little ones, are eſteemed highly becoming, inſomuch that I have obſerved them in different perſons full two inches in length. The women wear an apron, which, after paſſing ſeveral times round the waiſt, falls down to the toe; and ſome a petticoat ſo very fine and tranſparent, that modeſty obliges them to tuck up a corner of it to the fore part of the girdle, whereby one leg is completely expoſed. Their ſhift deſcends only to the top of the hip; and the headdreſs differs but little from that of the men, except that they roll their hair high upon the head, ſo as in ſome degree to give it the appearance of a crown. If to theſe we add a gown worn only on extraordinary occaſions, I have mentioned every article of their apparel.

The hair of both ſexes is remarkably fine, particularly that of the women: they comb it with great care, and anoint it frequently

with oil of the cocoat-nut, in order to ſtrengthen and render it of a deep black. The noſe is ſhort and depreſſed, but the noſtrils are by no means dilated like thoſe of the negro; nor, indeed, have I often obſerved an ugly or ill-favoured woman on theſe iſlands. The features are ſmall, and not always regular; but they have beautiful eyes, and faces uncommonly expreſſive and intereſting. They uſe pitchers of the bamboo; and ſome have a light ſort of leaf-hat, ſimilar to what is worn by Indians of the firſt diſtinction. One of the moſt beautiful objects, in my opinion, that can meet the eye of a painter, is a fine young Indian female on her way to fetch water from the well. The large leaf-hat, the delicate drapery of the thin tranſparent petticoat, and a light bamboo-pitcher in each hand, give a ſurpriſing grace and dignity to her perſon. In the remote parts of the country, and eſpecially at a diſtance from the miſſionaries, perſons of both ſexes go nearly naked.

The natives of Samar have fiſh in plenty and variety from their rivers, as well as the

ſea coaſt, the latter of which ſupplies them likewiſe with very elegant pearls; and their manner of fiſhing, from its ſingularity, merits notice:—There is a pea of an intoxicating quality, named *coco*, found in the iſland, which being reduced to a powder, is ſcattered by the Indian, at low water, over the ſand. Upon the return of the tide, the fiſh which have taken the bait appear floating in a ſtate of inſenſibility on the ſurface of the water, and are picked up with eaſe in what numbers the fiſherman judges convenient.

The iron-tree, ebony, and dyeing-wood, grow in every part of the iſland; and gold-duſt is found in ſome quantities in its more interior regions; but the monks, in their concern for the morals of the people, have been careful to take this dangerous branch of traffic into their own hands. The Spaniards themſelves are forbidden to reſide in the Indian villages, under the pretext of protecting the innocence of the natives from the corruption of European manners. The council at Manilla, however, has lately re-

ſtrained,

ſtrained, by various regulations, the exorbitant power aſſumed by the clergy in theſe iſlands.

CHAP. XXIII.

The natural Advantages of Samar are of a very ſuperior Kind—innocent Manners of theNatives—Depredations committed on the Spaniards by the piratical Moors—the Sea-fights of the latter deſcribed—Concluſions drawn from the Languages of the Phillippine Iſlands, and the Manners of the Inhabitants.

IT would require the elegant genius of a Virgil or a Theocritus, to make the reader conceive the natural advantages of Samar—the country, of all thoſe I have yet ſeen, or that perhaps exiſt in this planet, the moſt eminently beautiful. How often have I envied the Biſſayans (for, except the natives of Luconia, it is thus they name all the inhabitants of the Phillippine iſles) the happy

retirement of this little inſular paradiſe ! If in the province of Tegas the mind of the traveller is conſtantly rouſed and agitated by objects of grandeur and magnificence, in the iſland of Samar he is ſoothed and enchanted with an elegant and rich diſplay of ſimple beauty. In the former, the eye flits in ſucceſſion over Nature's ſtupendous works, from the noble but gloomy foreſt, to the widely extended plain, bounded by the diſtant horizon, and thence to rivers and lakes, the noiſe and vaſt ſurface of whoſe waters are formed to impreſs the mind with the awful majeſty of the Creator. In the latter are emanations of his goodneſs, ſprings, fountains, and rivulets ; landſcapes elegantly compoſed by various blendings of woods and lawns, curiouſly interſecting each other as they ſeem to float over the varied aſpect of the ſoil. Woods, it is true, without the extent and magnitude of the Tegan foreſt, but which, enlivened by the bloſſoms of ſpring, or loaded with autumnal fruits, yield balſam to the wounds, and odours for the refreſhment of the natives. The wild bee-hive ſuſpended from branches ;

the

the air highly perfumed with a fragrant ſpecies of wild jeſſamine, and the ſweet roſes of China; every thing, in ſhort, preſents Nature in adoleſcence, ſuch as ſhe exiſts before the folly and caprice of man have learned to disfigure or efface her native charms.

Here I was often at a loſs to determine which had moſt claim to my admiration, the beauty of the country, or the innocent manners of the natives. Having travelled half round the globe, I had become leſs addicted to local and illiberal partialities, and in ſome meaſure ſenſible how little the narrow prejudices of education accord with the ſentiments of an open and candid mind. Hence, if I envied the Biſſayan's country, I was ſtill more covetous of his ſociety, of that ſincerity viſible in the whole tenour of his conduct, and above all of that ſerenity of mind little exhibited in the more poliſhed circles of modern Europe. I ſurveyed with ſatisfaction the ſmalleſt of Nature's works, which the levity of a refined imagination has in no inſtance taught the Biſſayan either to impair or deſtroy. My heart was enchanted

chanted in attendance on their religious worſhip, which is accompanied with a ſimple but intereſting and expreſſive ſpecies of muſic. Under theſe and ſimilar impreſſions, I became particularly diſpoſed to acknowledge the goodneſs of Divine Providence, which had led me as it were by the hand through all my wanderings; and my thoughts being turned towards religion in general, I gave more attention than uſual to my own.

The language of Chriſtianity teaches us to aſcribe to the Divine Mind the attribute of excellence unknown to any other religious ſyſtem. In the New Teſtament he is repreſented equally tranſcending in meekneſs, gentleneſs, and humility, as in power, wiſdom, and majeſty; and not leſs great and adorable for the examples of his condeſcenſion, than for that aſtoniſhing grandeur diſplayed in the number and magnitude of his works. By other religions he has been pourtrayed as the object of awe and terror; by our's he is revealed in the amiable character of brother and friend, as well as of law-giver and judge. Qualified, therefore,

to

to quiet the fears, to encourage the hopes, and in one word to conſtitute the happineſs of all who ſubmit to its precepts in the ſame honeſty and ſimplicity with the good Biſſayans, the elements of the Chriſtian ſcheme eſtabliſh, in their uniform ſpirit and tendency, an unqueſtionable claim to the univerſal belief and acceptance of mankind.

The Moors, or Mahometan Indians, have little other employment than that of committing depredations on the Spaniards. At Borneo, and ſometimes Batavia, theſe pirates find a market for their priſoners; and I ſaw with no little ſurprize, at a Dutch ſettlement, the free ſubjects of Spain reduced to the wretched condition of ſlaves. The Mahometan in his hoſtile purſuits is actuated by a daring and intrepid ſpirit; and as he is generally the Spaniard's ſuperior in numbers, an attempt to board always accompanies his firſt onſet. In order firſt to clear the deck of his antagoniſt, the Moor begins the battle by a ſhower of *zigays*, or ſmall darts, which he pours upon the heads of his enemy, and inſtantly ſprings on board with his campilan or ſword in hand. Theſe barbarians

barians are but little acquainted with the uſe of fire-arms, and have only a few guns, which have accidentally fallen into their hands in the courſe of their wars with Europeans. In this reſpect they are widely different from their brethren in the neighbourhood of the Dutch ſettlements, who have eſtabliſhed a rude manufacture of muſkets on ſeveral of their iſlands, and are in general greatly before them in improvement. I was much pleaſed in obſerving, as often as I could, the infant induſtry of this archipelago, whoſe inhabitants are only emerging from a total ignorance of the arts, by means of the information they derive from Europeans and Chineſe. The veſſel employed by the Mahometans in their cruiſes againſt the Spaniards is named *bouanga*, and is probably the ſame with the *proa* of Commodore Anſon, which he ſaw in the Marian iſles, and which is particularly deſcribed in his voyage. Conjecturing from the velocity with which it was ſeen to croſs the horizon, he could not ſuppoſe the rate of the bouanga or proa's ſailing to be leſs than ſeven or eight leagues an hour.

The

The Chineſe in their commercial purſuits were uſed to viſit, in the courſe of the fine ſeaſon, the principal iſlands of this archipelago; but the Europeans having been long at war with the natives, the neceſſity of being in a ſtate of preparation has corrupted the character of the Indians, and taught them to prefer a kind of piratical induſtry to the exerciſe of a fair trade. The Moors are attached to the ſervice of certain chiefs, who pay tribute to Holo, Borneo, or ſome other conſiderable iſlands; and many of them have their reſidence and poſſeſſions in the iſlands of a ſmall archipelago, which occupies a ſpace laid down on the maps as unknown, ſituated between Borneo, Holo, the Molucca, and New Phillippine iſles. According to the beſt information I was able to obtain in the Phillippine iſles and at Batavia, theſe iſlanders have a ſtriking reſemblance to the people of Otaheite, as deſcribed by Monſieur Bougainville, and indeed to the natives in general of thoſe more ſouthern regions.

The inhabitants of all the iſlands above mentioned having in their manners, cuſtoms, language, and features, more analogy

to

to one another than to the people of the continent, I think it natural to infer, that their intercourſe with the Aſiatics is comparatively of a recent date, and that their firſt emigration from the old world muſt have happened at a very ancient period; and hence it is that the race of men in theſe regions of the globe, their language, manners, and uſages, have acquired ſo peculiar a caſt. They ſpeak in ſoft tones of voice; and I was told that the Biſſayan language in general is ſmooth and modulated. Like the ſavages of New Spain, however, they frequently utter guttural ſounds, by preſſing the tongue againſt the palate. Vowels in their origin ſeem to be the ſimple cries of animal nature; and for this reaſon the language of a ſolitary ſavage conſiſts in the mere emiſſion of inarticulate ſounds, a faculty in common to man with the greater part of other animals. Conſonants are conventional, and, like the ſtops of a muſical inſtrument, mark the diſtinction or articulation of ſound, and are of ſubſequent and curious invention. Their numbers increaſe with the progreſs and improvements of ſociety; and that language

language in which mutes and vocal ſounds come to be moſt happily combined, will be deemed the moſt agreeable vehicle of our ideas. I conceive this to be the reaſon why the languages of all barbarous tribes contain many more inarticulate ſounds than that of any half civilized nation, with which I am acquainted. I own, however, that my knowledge of the Biſſayan language is but imperfect, having ſpent too little time in theſe iſlands to be able to ſpeak it with great fluency.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

The Galleon ſails for Manilla—Anchors in the Harbour of Cavite—Deſcription of the Country contiguous to Manilla—Shyneſs of the Catholic Miſſionaries in their Conduct towards Strangers—Particulars relative to the native Indians—Chaſtity of the Females—Two remarkable Incidents which characterize the genuine Simplicity of the Natives, by whoſe exemplary Lives the Morals of the Spaniards have been improved.

THOUGH we had been favoured with many intervals of fine weather, the weſterly winds continued to blow till the end of September, but the wind ſhifting to the N. N. E. we then prepared for our departure; and on the 7th of October, every thing being on board, ſailed with an eaſterly wind for Manilla. We ſteered W. N. W. in order to enter the Phillippine Archipelago; but towards evening were obliged to ſhorten ſail, being deterred by the violence of

of the current from attempting the paſſage of San Bernardino during the night. Next day we paſſed the ſtraits, leaving the little iſland San Bernardino in the middle of a paſſage about three leagues in breadth, formed by the iſland Luconia and a number of ſmaller ones contiguous to Samar. Here the ſea has a moſt rapid current, attended with whirlpools, which retarded our progreſs; but the direction of the ſtream being generally in our favour, and the wind increaſing we ſoon paſſed the iſland Capul, and the *Narangean* iſles. I ſaw the iſland San Hyacyntho, or Ticao, where the galleon takes in water and proviſions before her final departure for Acapulco. After San *Hyacyntho*, continuing to coaſt the main land, we paſſed in view of Maſbate and Burias, and entered a kind of baſon twenty leagues in extent. We paſſed Marindouque on the left, and ſteering into a ſecond baſon, came in view of an European veſſel, but as ſhe had a great deal of wood upon deck, and carried little ſail, we were unable to aſcertain to what country ſhe belonged; conſidering that theſe ſeas are but rarely fre-

quented by European merchantmen, we gave her chaſe. She proved to be the San Carlos, a Manilla galleon, which, in her paſſage to Acapulco, had met with a ſevere gale of wind north of the Marian iſles, and after rolling away her main and mizen maſts, was on her way back to be repaired.

Purſuing the ſame direction, we diſcovered Mount Calapan, in the iſland Mindoro, which we ſoon left to the ſouth. This iſland and the main land form a channel, in paſſing through which, a freſh wind ſpringing up, we made good way, and at length deſcried the mountains of Maribelles, ſituated S. W. from the bay of Manilla. Two paſſages lead into the bay; the firſt, though wider than the other, is more difficult, on account of the bank of Saint Nicolas; and therefore we proceeded directly towards the one more remote. They are formed by the iſland Corregidor, and on the ſide of the ſea by a number of ſmall iſlands, and a cluſter of rocks named Cavallo Puercas. The wind blowing freſh at E. and E. N. E. we anchored off Corregidor till the next morning in fifteen fathoms water,

with

with a bottom of ſand; and on the 15th of October dropped anchor in the Port Cavite, ſituated N. E. from the Bay of Manilla. Cavite is the harbour chiefly frequented by the king's ſhips while in the Phillippine iſles. The ſhallow water of the river, it being only twelve or fifteen feet at flood, obliges large veſſels to lie here, though at two leagues diſtance from Manilla. As high as the city the tide ſeldom riſes above ſix feet. The harbour is formed by a tongue of land, which ſhelters it from the S. W. and N. W. winds, the moſt formidable to the navigation of theſe ſeas; and as it is a bold ſhore, the ſhips moor cloſe in, in perfect ſafety. On the point of this tongue of land ſtands an arſenal, which is defended by excellent batteries, is of great extent, and well provided with dock-yards and naval ſtores. The arſenal towards Manilla is protected by a fort erected on the ſame tongue of land; and the whole is covered with very ſtrong walls on the ſide of the ſea. The town at the port of Cavite is named Saint Roch, and peopled with Indians, who make excellent ſailors, as well as workmen for the arſenal.

I was extremely ſatisfied to find myſelf in a city whoſe contiguity to the European ſettlements in the eaſt has conſiderably corrected the harſh ſpirit of national prejudices in the Spaniards; prejudices which on various occaſions, during my reſidence in New Spain, as well as on my paſſage from Acapulco to the Phillippine iſles, I own diſconcerted me not a little. From the Dominicans, who often ſent miſſionaries hence to China, I expected (but I am ſorry I muſt add, in vain) ſuch documents and inſtructions to their friends in that empire, as might facilitate my intended expedition to Tartary. The inveterate averſion of that people to admit ſtrangers into the interior parts of their country, rendered this the only expedient from which I could hope for ſucceſs; but finding my views diſappointed in this part of my plan, by the indifference, perhaps policy, of the Dominican miſſionaries, I reſolved to continue my travels round the globe by the way of India.

As I never loſt ſight of one great object, the ſtudy of ſimple and uncultivated man, in whatever part of the world I might find him,

him, the circumſtances of my reſidence at Manilla were happily choſen. I was lodged on a bank of the river, whoſe gentle ſtream glided ſilently under my windows, between rows of the *mangoe*, *mangouſtan*, and Chineſe orange-trees, and only one mile diſtant from Manilla, a ſpace entirely covered with huts, gardens, and country ſeats. The road leading to the city by land paſſes through five villages, which may be conſidered as the ſuburbs of Manilla, and preſents a proſpect chiefly conſiſting of rice grounds equally beautiful. About a hundred paces from my door ſtood an eminence ſloping gently into a plain, which afforded a common paſture to all the cattle of the neighbourhood. It being the cuſtom of the inhabitants to travel as well as to tranſport their goods by water, numbers of boats and canoes, employed in conveying the produce of the fields and gardens to market, were inceſſantly paſſing under my eye; and, indeed, no ſtreet of any city can preſent a more gay or crowded proſpect than the river of Manilla. My hoſt had taken advantage of the gentleneſs of the current, and built one half of his houſe

within the verge of the water, while ſome Indians, his neighbours, had erected theirs on feeble pillars of the bamboo, from two to four yards in the channel, a circumſtance which contributed to render their habitations eminently clean and wholſome. The ſtyle of building is nearly the ſame with that in the Biſſayan iſlands. The houſes of the Spaniards are of ſtone, ſpacious, and in a taſte entirely different from that of the Indian cottage; inſtead of glaſs-panes for their windows, they uſe a kind of tranſparent ſhell, ſimilar to mother-of-pearl, which admits light in ſufficient quantity to anſwer every uſeful purpoſe.

On the iſland Luconia my time was devoted as uſual to the company and converſation of the natives. I lodged, boarded, and ſlept, juſt as they did, which I eſteem the only method of becoming acquainted with the real character and diſpoſition of the people. Though the Indians here ſeem to poſſeſs the ſame good qualities of the heart which diſtinguiſh the inhabitants of the other iſlands, they are not equally free from a certain tincture of whim and caprice.

The

The natural turn of their mind is gay, lively, and adroit; but ſuch as inhabit the more northern parts of the iſland are extremely coarſe and ruſtic, both in their perſons and manners. From the natural richneſs of the ſoil the natives ſeemed to have imbibed a kind of vanity, which, joined to the univerſal practice of mutual charity and beneficence, makes them averſe to any laborious occupation. The expence of maintenance is an object beneath their notice; and hence ſtrangers from the diſtant villages of their own tribe often make viſits of three or four months at their houſes. This national hoſpitality is exerciſed in a more eminent degree in favour of their own immediate connections; and, therefore, an Indian frequently entertains the whole family of a poor relation as long as they are diſpoſed to continue under his roof. The members of a family ſeldom ſeparating upon the marriage of the younger branches, four or five different heads, with their reſpective children, often live together in the ſame hut. I have frequently admired this little community aſſembled in good-humour, and ſitting

down together, without one ſymptom of envy or jealouſy, to partake their meal out of the ſame diſh. It might be ſuppoſed that families thus conſtituted would require many different apartments. This, however, is not the caſe: every individual, ſtrangers themſelves not excepted, ſleeps on a mat ſpread on the ground in the ſame apartment; and yet it rarely happens that any act of impropriety is known to take place betwixt the ſexes. I have ſometimes found, when I awaked in the morning, that I had borrowed the half of a fine young Indian's mat, who was faſt aſleep by my ſide, without my giving offence to her, or promoting ſcandal in the family. I underſtand that the ſame habits of domeſtic life prevail in many countries remote from this iſland, without being attended with any inconvenience to good morals. Indeed, the very exiſtence of this perilous cuſtom is a proof, in my judgement, of great purity as well as ſimplicity of manners in the people among whom it prevails.

It is remarkable, that during the whole time I ſpent on the iſland Luconia, I never met

met with a ſingle inſtance of wrangling between huſband and wife, a circumſtance that is but too common in the moſt civilized nations of Europe. The manners of even the richeſt Spaniards have been improved by the exemplary lives of the natives; and hence there is ſcarcely one family of condition at Manilla, which has not two or three *creanſas*, or poor orphans, in the houſe, fed, cloathed, and lodged, in all reſpects, like their own children. It is conceived to be the duty of the patron, as ſoon as the orphans he has adopted arrive at the age of puberty, to get the females married, and the males into ſuch employments as are ſuited to their reſpective geniuſes and capacities. I have ſeen, among the objects of this domeſtic charity, women who had been portioned from the bounty of their benefactors to the amount of five or ſix thouſand piaſtres. At Manilla there are likewiſe public foundations or convents, into which poor girls are admitted; who, after being properly reared and educated, are diſmiſſed with a competent portion.

The

The children of the natives, to the age of ten or twelve years, uſually run about in their ſhirts, without any other covering whatever. I think this improper even in boys; and to permit girls of the ſame age, in a warm climate, to appear conſtantly with ſo ſlender a covering, borders upon indecency, and ſeems to imply a culpable negligence in the parents. I am of opinion, however, that in young people nakedneſs is not perceived to be the cauſe of ſhame until the paſſion of ſex begins to be excited. This idea was firſt ſuggeſted to my mind by the two following incidents:

I had walked one day into a wood about a league's diſtance from Manilla, where, happening to meet with an Indian cottage, I found a girl of ten or twelve years of age before the door, ſitting on her hams. She roſe the inſtant ſhe ſaw me, and was at ſome pains to replace her ſhift, which ſhe had gathered up to her arms. Still, however, ſhe remained completely expoſed where modeſty is ever moſt anxious to draw her veil; but her ſhoulders being now covered, ſhe ſeemed ſatisfied that all was well, and in a moment

moment every ſymptom of embarraſſment vaniſhed.

I had occaſion to obſerve for ſeveral days the ſon of my hoſt, aged eleven years, and the daughter of an Indian, his neighbour, about ten, who began in their childiſh ſports to betray a certain uneaſineſs. They were mutually fond of each other, mingled little with their companions, and every kind of play, except that between themſelves, was evidently tireſome and inſipid: into this, without deſign or conſciouſneſs in them, ſomething myſterious ſeemed to be infuſed. They were cloathed only in their ſhirts; but I could obſerve, that when the heart felt a particular emotion, they inſtinctively drew it over that part, of which, on ordinary occaſions, and in the preſence of indifferent perſons, they ſeemed wholly unmindful.

My hoſteſs, who had entered the matrimonial career at the age of thirteen, had gone in the raiment of nature till the year preceding her marriage. Savages, except in cold climates, the Indians of the Phillippine iſles, the natives of many parts of India, and the Arabs, generally go naked, or at leaſt with

but

but a ſlight covering round the loins, without being conſcious of the ſmalleſt impropriety in their appearance. The tawny colour of the ſkin, like a thin mantle, ſhades their perſons; but, what is of more conſequence, they are accuſtomed to view with indifference, or in the modeſty of nature, that part of the human frame to which, in refined ages, the unbridled and inflamed imagination of man attaches ideas of intemperate and criminal ſenſuality. In civilized ſociety we often meet with an affectation of modeſty, which almoſt invariably betrays a latent corruption of morals; whereas the thoughtleſs indifference of the Indian or ſavage, as to his outward appearance, is, in my eſtimation, a ſtrong proof of the purity and innocence of his mind.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXV.

Deſcription of the City and Harbour of Manilla—Saint Croix and ſeveral other Towns in the Vicinity deſcribed—Policy of the Chineſe in obtaining a Settlement in the commercial Town of Parian—Character of this enterprizing People—Cautions the Japaneſe obſerve in their commercial Intercourſe with other Nations—Particulars relative to the Inhabitants of the Iſland of Luconia.

THE city of Manilla is of conſiderable extent. The ſtreets are handſome, and built in a good ſtile, and the houſes better and more convenient than may be diſcovered at firſt ſight by a ſtranger. The inhabitants of the firſt diſtinction are rich, and thoſe of the inferior orders are generally in eaſy circumſtances. Here the taſte for expence, luxury, and debauchery, is much leſs than that which, as I have already remarked, prevails at Mexico. Every object around me ſeemed to have aſſumed the air of the gay, ſimple, and ingenuous Indian; inſomuch,

ſomuch, that even the haughty and arrogant temper of the Spaniard appeared in ſome meaſure to have been ſubdued by the mild example of his more amiable neighbour.

The river flows under the city-walls, is the harbour for merchant ſhips, and ſeparates Manilla from the Town of Saint Croix. Saint Croix is in part equally well built with the capital, is populous in Indians and Spaniards, and ſurrounded by three villages of the natives, which may be regarded as ſuburbs. At a ſhort diſtance, on the oppoſite bank of the river, but on the ſame ſide with Manilla, are ſeveral conſiderable towns alſo belonging to the natives. Few merchants, and ſtill fewer mechanics, reſide within the walls of Manilla. The great ſeat of their manufactures, as well as the emporium of all kinds of merchandize, is a town named *Parian*, on the other ſide of the river, which is pretty regularly built, and inhabited chiefly by Chineſe. The Chineſe, who in former times uſed to come only once a year from Canton or Quemoy, found means, under the pretext of embracing Chriſtianity, but, in fact, in order to poſſeſs

poſſeſs themſelves of the trade of the country, to leave a few of their companions in the iſland. From this colony their population has ever ſince been increaſing; and at preſent they amount to more than twenty thouſand, who, after engroſſing the whole of the manufactures, and the principal part of the trade of Manilla, begin to turn their attention to agriculture. They are extremely artful and deſigning in buſineſs, inſinuating in their addreſs, and, under the maſk of a ſmiling countenance, ever on the watch to take advantage of the credulous cuſtomer. But they are ſober, induſtrious, affable, and lively. In their perſons they are well-proportioned; and the expreſſion of the face, which is by no means engaging at firſt view, after a little acquaintance becomes ſomewhat intereſting. I imagined I could diſcover a kind of analogy between the Chineſe countenance and that of the Indians of the Phillippine iſles. The bones, however, of the face, eyes, and the bulk of the features, taken ſeparately, are different, and much more comely in the latter than in the former; but there is a conſiderable reſem-

blance in the noſe, and general effect of the whole.

Among the inhabitants of Manilla are Armenian merchants, Malays, natives of the Malabar coaſt, and of the kingdom of Siam, beſides a few Japaneſe, who having been accidentally thrown on theſe coaſts, have choſen to ſettle on the iſland. It is a law of the emperor of Japan, that none of his ſubjects, under pain of death, ſhall ſail out of ſight of land: hence ſuch as happen to be forced by the violence of wind and weather to a different ſhore, renounce every idea of ever returning to their native country. With an extreme deference for their ſuperiors, they are ſober, brave, and poſſeſſed of a good underſtanding. In their deportment they are grave and ſedate; hardy and robuſt in their perſons; but though formed by nature to endure the ſevereſt toil, they ſeem diſpoſed to ſubmit to it as little as poſſible. Theſe obſervations, however, being collected in the courſe of a very ſhort acquaintance with only a few of their countrymen, when applied to their national character muſt be received rather as conjectural, than as a certain

tain information aſcertained by long experience.

I was told by the natives of Japan, that the only open trade they carry on is with the Chineſe; and even this is ſubjected to numberleſs ſevere reſtrictions. The rigorous terms on which the Japaneſe admit Hollanders into their ports are generally known. As ſoon as a Dutch veſſel enters the harbour, ſhe is conſigned to a Japaneſe magiſtrate, as a pledge of the company's good behaviour on ſhore; and in the mean time the buſineſs of her voyage is tranſacted by European agents, in a place completely walled in, and ſecluded from the public. Some time ſince the Manillans ſent deputies and preſents to Japan, with overtures of friendſhip, and an offer of entering into ſuch a treaty of commerce as might be deemed beneficial to both nations. The Japaneſe received the deputies with much reſpect, accepted their preſents, and made them others in return, of much higher value; but declined to negociate on any terms whatever, either a commercial or political alliance between the two countries. Much about the

ſame period, and for a ſimilar purpoſe, the council of Manilla diſpatched an embaſſy to Pekin; where, being received in the character of Indians, they obtained a free trade over the whole maritime bounds of the empire, a trade which, in the hands of the Spaniards, is unſkilfully managed; but which, as it is a voyage of little more than a hundred leagues from Luconia to the Chineſe coaſt, is capable of being greatly extended.

Articles of beautiful workmanſhip in gold, and a ſpecies of metal named tombac, which is eſteemed one third more precious, are manufactured by the artiſts of Manilla; and the gold chains made by their women vie in beauty with the moſt elegant I have ever ſeen in any other part of the world.

In the dependencies of the Phillippine iſles are numbers of birds neſts, which are eſteemed very ſalutary and delicate eating. They have excellent mangoes; and the ſago of Luconia, a ſpecies of gum which diſtils from the lopped boughs of a certain tree, is ſaid to be extremely beneficial to the ſtomach.

In

In various parts of this iſland is found a race of men who, in their features and complection, have a ſtriking reſemblance to the negro. They are conſtantly diſcovered wandering through the woods, of a very diminutive ſtature, and of uncommonly mild and gentle diſpoſitions. No account is given of their origin, nor by what means this dwarfiſh race came to be ſettled in the iſland. There are alſo ſeveral hordes of roving Indians, who have never yet embraced Chriſtianity, and who are ſtill too barbarous to be incorporated into villages.

The inhabitants of the ſea coaſt, as in the iſland of Samar, were formerly Mahometans, and governed by chiefs named *Datous*, who, while they exerciſed ſovereign authority over their vaſſals, owed allegiance and tribute in their turn to certain neighbouring princes. Some of theſe chiefs ſtill exiſt in the Biſſayan iſles, but retain no other memorial of their ancient greatneſs than the privilege of collecting a revenue, from themſelves as well as their vaſſals, to the crown of Spain. It is, however, very trifling, and exacted with the ſame ſpirit

of moderation as is exercised in New Spain. A few of these Datous are found likewise in the island of Luconia, but without a shadow of consequence or authority. I knew a woman at Manilla, Indian and Chinese by extraction, who had a half-blood brother descended from one of those ancient chieftains. He had long entertained hopes of obtaining the exemptions contained in a late edict of Spain, in favour of his birth; but the governor, under various pretences, contrived to elude his claim; and he died soon after of want and a broken heart.

I also saw at this place an officer in very mean and indigent circumstances, who inherited not only the name, but the royal blood of the Montezumas, the hereditary emperors of Mexico. The lineal descendants of this illustrious race of princes have only a small annual pension of five thousand piastres, with the vain privilege of being escorted in their carriage by a body guard. Precluded, however, by poverty from exercising these empty honours, they are contented to have their guards, with the arms of the empire, which they are likewise entitled

titled to bear, engraved on their ſeals. An anxious policy, not perhaps of the Spaniſh nation in general, but rather, I ſuſpect, of certain individuals at Manilla, has been too ſucceſsful in rendering theſe unfortunate men extremely odious to the Indians—a policy, however, which would be neither unnatural nor wholly to be condemned, were it exerciſed with moderation. Upon the arrival of an Engliſh ſquadron at Manilla, many of the Indians ran with open arms to receive them; but the giddineſs of theſe infatuated men was chaſtiſed with infinite ſeverity, inſomuch that the deſolation of almoſt a whole province could ſcarce atone for their temerity. The *Sanglayes* or Chineſe, though, it muſt be allowed, with leſs reaſon, fell into the ſame ſnare, and were puniſhed, if poſſible, with more unrelenting cruelty. Hunted, like the beaſts of the deſert, in every corner of the country, thoſe whom their enemies could not apprehend were ſhot in the purſuit; while the miſerable Sanglayes who happened to fall into their hands were blown from the mouths of cannon. In ſhort, this would have been the æra of their

final extinction in the island, had it been in the power of the Spaniards to lay their hands upon a few who fortunately found refuge in the English camp.

CHAP. XXVI.

Advantages which might result from a Commerce with Luconia and the Bissayan Isles—their natural Productions and those of the Phillippine Isles—Ingenuity of the Native Indians—the Spaniards might cultivate Spices successfully in this Part of their Territories—Talents and Industry of the Natives of the Phillippine Isles—a new Traffic suggested to Spain.

FROM what I was able to learn, during the six months I passed in Luconia and the Bissayan isles, as well as from what I myself had occasion to observe relative to the soil, climate, and character of the natives, I am led to entertain a very high idea of the advantages which might be derived from the

the commerce of theſe iſlands. They produce rice, corn, and vegetables, in great variety and abundance, the exportation of which to different parts of India would return ample profits to the merchant. The Dutch at Batavia have not a ſufficient quantity of rice and corn for their own conſumption; while the peninſula of the Carnatic is obliged to import, at a great expence, corn and vegetables from *Surat*. The ſugars raiſed in the provinces contiguous to Manilla, whoſe cultivation might be greatly extended, would, if exported to India, divide the profits of a very lucrative trade, at preſent wholly in the hands of the Engliſh and Dutch. That the advantages of this trade are very conſiderable, is evident from the conduct of the Engliſh, who find their account in ſmuggling ſugars into the ports of Batavia and Malacca, although the ſame manufactures have been eſtabliſhed in theſe iſlands by the Company. I had an opportunity of obſerving, that at Bombay, Surat, Maſcate, Bender, Aboucheir, and Baſſora, the article of ſugar is eſteemed a very valuable branch of commerce.

If the cultivation of indigo and cocoa has never been carried to perfection in the Philippine iſles, it is by no means owing to any defect either in climate or ſoil, but ſolely to the want of enterprize and induſtry in the people. Indigo grows wild in many parts of the country; but the inhabitants do not ſeem to have reflected that it might be greatly increaſed in quantity, as well as improved in quality, by care and cultivation. This production, however, might be ſold to great advantage in India; and every one knows the high value of both commodities to all the nations in Europe. Wherever cultivation has been applied to cocoa, it has been found to thrive in an eminent degree, and to be even of a ſuperior quality to that of *Caraca*.

Theſe iſlands produce different kinds of wood and bark uſeful in dyeing, as alſo ebony, and in general every ſpecies of precious wood employed for the purpoſes of the cabinet-maker. The ſmall number of trees cut down by the Indians fall into the hands of the Chineſe, who diſpoſe of them to Indian or European merchants, for the Aſiatic

or

or European market. This branch of commerce I have no doubt might become extremely beneficial to the public, were the Spaniards at a little pains to examine the valuable productions of their own foreſts.

The quantity of cotton produced in the Phillippine iſles is almoſt incredible, and this, joined to the natural induſtry and docility of the natives, might enable the Spaniards to produce manufactures in that branch equal, perhaps ſuperior, to thoſe either of India or China. The Indian diſplays an ingenuity in the purſuit of his different occupations, which exceeds every thing I have had occaſion to obſerve in any other part of the world. His beautiful dyes, extracted from the wood and bark of foreſt-trees, he prepares and employs in the fabric of his ſtuffs, with a neatneſs and elegance peculiar to himſelf. It would be difficult to find a family in the Biſſayan iſlands, which does not practiſe the art of weaving for its own private convenience; and therefore the Spaniards have only to ſtimulate and direct the application of their preſent habits and induſtry, in order to obtain the beſt and moſt brilliant

brilliant manufactures of the eaſt. But the very promiſing circumſtances of theſe iſlands to the manufacture of lawn, muſlins, and every other article in cotton, which conſtitute half the trade between India and Europe, though ſuch as to merit the moſt aſſiduous zeal for their improvement, have hitherto been almoſt entirely neglected.

Iron mines were once begun to be wrought in the inland diſtricts of Laguna and Cagayan, but afterwards abandoned from the unſkilfulneſs of the workmen: theſe, in proper hands, might afford an advantageous trade with every part of India, which conſtantly receives a conſiderable part of what it conſumes of this article from the European market. The pearl-fiſheries on its ſea coaſts, and the gold duſt found in the interior parts of the iſland, are alſo objects of importance; but their value is ſufficient to rouſe the attention of the Spaniards, who ought to require of the miſſionaries on the ſpot ſuch information as might render them of public utility.

The quantity of pepper I have ſeen in the Biſſayan woods, I ſhall not affect to eſtimate,

as

as I might not be credited. Among their various productions, I met with a young branch of the clove-tree, which was meant, by the perſon in whoſe hand I ſaw it, for ſome medical purpoſe; but reſpecting this ſpecimen I can ſay little, not having had it in my power to aſcertain its ſpecific qualities to my own ſatisfaction. Still, however, the ſmall ſample I have mentioned, rendering the clove-tree's exiſtence in the iſland at leaſt probable, might, I think, warrant more accurate inquiries into the nature of this article. The nutmeg of Manilla, which grows on the confines of Laguna, is not, I believe, equally good with that of the Molucca iſles; but it ſeemed generally admitted, that in proportion to the degree of care and attention beſtowed on its culture, its fruit was of a better or inferior quality. I have much reaſon to believe that cinnamon is far from being a rare commodity in the iſland of Mindanao; and though, like the nutmeg of Luconia, it has ſomething wild and unpleaſant in its flavour, this inferiority of quality may be owing to the want of that cultivation alone, by which, I have little doubt, the fruit

fruit of the Spaniſh cinnamon-tree might be rendered equal to any exported from the Dutch ſettlements. The vaſt influx of wealth derived to the Dutch from their monopoly of ſpices, pepper, nutmegs, cinnamon, and cloves, ought, one would ſuppoſe, to kindle a ſpark of emulation in the breaſt of the Spaniard, and draw his attention to the ſame productions, which are ſuffered to grow wild and unheeded in the Phillippine woods.

The great quantities of wax obtained from the wild bee-hive of the wood, the delicate luxury of the birds neſts, the oil and bark of the cocoa-nut, and many other articles equally deſpiſed by the Spaniards, would, in more induſtrious hands, afford ſubordinate branches of traffic with the different nations of India.

Having mentioned a few of the moſt valuable productions of thoſe iſlands, ſuſceptible of culture and improvement, I am next to obſerve, that, conſidering the population and capacities of the natives, it would be eaſy to render them the inſtruments of carrying every uſeful purſuit to its higheſt

pitch

pitch of perfection. I am bold to aſſert this upon the evidence of that activity, ingenuity, and reſolution in the Indians, which I witneſſed in many different ſituations.

The fame of the Bohol and Cavite warriors extends over the bounds of the Phillippine iſles; nor are the natives of the other provinces, who have had equal advantages of diſcipline and experience, at all inferior in the practice of war. In a country ſo very little indebted to its connection with Europe, one is aſtoniſhed to find nautical artiſts of all kinds, ſhip-builders, caulkers, maſters, and pilots. At Cavite, Pangaſſinan, and ſeveral other places, they conſtruct ſhips of the line, I cannot ſay equally well finiſhed with ours, but ſufficiently ſtrong, and in good proportion. The fibres of the cabonegro and fig-tree ſupply them with excellent materials for cordage. From their foreſt-trees they have learned to extract different kinds of pitch and tar, equal in quality to thoſe of Europe. The huſk or cover of the cocoa-nut is uſed for caulking, as is a certain compoſition of oil and plaiſter for paying the hull of the veſſel. The mines of

Luconia furniſh iron for anchors, nails, and all other articles neceſſary to the equipment of ſhipping. The Indian, conſidering his natural ſtrength and agility, and his uſual reſidence on the ſea coaſt, or on the banks of rivers, is in reality born and bred for the ſea; and on ſhore, works with a verſatility of genius peculiar to himſelf in the ſeveral trades of carpenter, caulker, weaver, ſail and rope-maker. But if to what I have ſaid reſpecting the productions of the Phillippine iſles, the induſtry, the genius, and capacities of the natives, whence I am fully perſuaded every article of trade exported from India to Europe might be derived, I add, that theſe countries produce abundance of naval ſtores, and timber for ſhip-building; that the Indians, from rapid population, may be ſpared for equipping as well as navigating the fleets of Spain, without inconvenience to the improvement either of commerce or agriculture, I ſhall then have deſcribed the means of an oriental navy, capable of ſupplying the place of all the men and ſhips ſent from the weſtern hemiſphere to the Eaſt Indies, whether for the purpoſe of national de-

fence

fence in time of war, or of trade and commerce in times of peace.

Having conſidered the Phillippine iſles as competent to the production of every eaſtern commodity; when we turn our eye to the map of the world, we ſhall find that their ſituation is extremely favourable to a direct trade with the parent country, as well as with the provinces of Peru and New Spain, by way of the South Sea. Many of theſe iſlands, beſides Luconia, poſſeſs excellent harbours; but I cannot adviſe the removal of their trade with Europe from its preſent center at Manilla, until the peculiar advantages of the route by the newly-diſcovered ſtraits of Captain Cook ſhall be more fully aſcertained. Their trade, however, by the South Sea might be transferred with great propriety to a port at the point of *Naga*, on the eaſtern coaſt of the ſame iſland; a ſituation which would greatly abridge the moſt difficult part of the ſhip's paſſage acroſs the Phillippine Archipelago, during the dangerous and tempeſtuous ſeaſon of the weſterly winds.

The

The proximity of theſe iſlands to the coaſt of China might enable the Spaniards, by means of Chineſe veſſels, which frequent this archipelago, to obtain tea, ſilk, porcelain, and whatever other commodities are not the natural produce of their own colonies; and at the ſame time, in order to the inſtruction and improvement of the natives, they might find it eaſy to entice from China and Bengal eminent artiſts in all the different branches of Indian manufacture. Emigration from the coaſt of China to the Phillippine iſles is ſo conſiderable, that I am convinced the Spaniard, with a little policy, might have been long ſince in poſſeſſion of all the ſkill and dexterity of the Chineſe, without either trouble or expence. And nothing, in my opinion, but the groſſeſt ignorance of the firſt principles of ſound policy, can ſhew why their contiguity and intercourſe with this people have hitherto been little, or rather in no degree uſeful to the Spaniſh colonies. The emigrants from China and the other nations of India, under proper management, might by this time have greatly contributed to promote the induſtry and population

tion of theſe iſlands, and have ſuperſeded the neceſſity of any other encouragement from Spain, than the inſpection of intelligent men, who could give a proper direction to the labour of the Indians, and the natural reſources of the ſoil.

CHAP. XXVII.

Diſquiſitions on foreign Settlements and their political Government—Practicability of forming a perfect Union, in a Colony, amongſt People from various Countries—Vigilance of the Engliſh in promoting their Commerce—Trade at Manilla.

THE political government of the Spaniſh colonies has ſuggeſted the few following reflections on this ſubject. Foreign ſettlements, in my opinion, are only ſo far deſirable as they are the means of increaſing the number of uſeful and active citizens, who may co-operate at home and abroad in promoting the riches, ſtability,

and ſplendour of the parent ſtate; and therefore a miniſter may be very idly employed in augmenting the number and extent of national dependencies; for if he is careleſs of their induſtry and population, they will ſoon become a burthen upon the mother country, or at beſt fluctuating and unproductive ſpeculations in the general ſyſtem of commerce.

The number of uſeful citizens may be increaſed by incorporating the natives with the colonial ſettlement. The Indians, though little advanced in the arts of civilization, are in general tractable; and were they to find themſelves emancipated from the rigorous yoke of their own domineering ariſtocracy, and admitted to the full participation of a mild and equitable government, they would be naturally engaged to reſpect and imitate the character and genius of their maſters.

The emigration of men diſheartened and depreſſed at home by misfortunes, by ſevere and ungrateful toil, or by the harſh and rapacious conduct of their ſuperiors, but who are led to hope for better days in a foreign

country, is another means of adding to the liſt of uſeful citizens. It is difficult, I confeſs, to inſpire the mind of the refugee with principles of ſtrong attachment to a ſtrange ſoil; but ſtill, by ſcattering them over the country, attaching them by certain rewards to different occupations, particularly to that of agriculture, and above all, by treating them in every ſituation juſtly and humanely, the affections of the emigrants would cooperate with the views of government, and at laſt conform to the pureſt ſentiments of public virtue.

Were the laws and principles of Chriſtianity, as they are contained in the ſacred code, candidly preſented and explained to rude and uninformed minds, they would lay the foundation of the moſt perfect union practicable among a people originally collected from different countries. Mutual charity and confidence, which ought to unite the hearts of all men who are ſincere in their profeſſion of the Chriſtian faith, are the ſtrongeſt obligations that can be imagined to produce concord in the purſuit of temporal intereſts. Hence the miſſionary, who is actuated by the

honeſt and diſintereſted zeal of making himſelf uſeful, may render eminent ſervice to his country, by ſowing the ſeeds of loyalty and allegiance in the minds of its new ſubjects. But while eccleſiaſtics are countenanced and protected by the magiſtrate in executing the duties of their office, the people ought likewiſe to be ſecured, by proper regulations, againſt that arrogant and domineering ſpirit ſo natural to the clergy.

Equality, as far as is conſiſtent with the difference of talents and property, ought to ſubſiſt between the natives of the new country and the deſcendants of the parent ſtate. Rewards, honours, and employments, at leaſt of a ſubordinate nature, ſhould lie open to merit, in whatever order of men it may be found; and, as nothing tends more to conſolidate the union of different races of men than alliances by marriage, this ſhould receive every poſſible encouragement. The ancient uſages, and even prejudices of ſtrangers, ſhould be treated with moderation and indulgence; and, in general, whatever may contribute to unite the people in one liberal ſociety, appears to me rationally practicable,

in

in inſtilling into the minds of aliens and foreigners the true principles of fidelity and allegiance.

This policy, however, ſeems only applicable to colonial ſettlements; for I ſuſpect that, in a great nation, to mix and compound the breed in the ſame manner might baſtardize the native character and genius of the people at large. If the elementary principles of national character are bad, nothing remains in the power of the political phyſician, but to alter and regulate its direction; for it is incapable of being entirely changed to advantage, and will always be, ſuch as it is, better than when adulterated by the introduction of foreign ingredients.

Colonies, on the contrary, in their original conſtitution contain principles of a heterogeneous nature; and this circumſtance, together with their diſtance from the ſeat of government, will, in a great meaſure, account for their ſubſequent depravity. His remote ſituation not only excluding the coloniſt from places of truſt at home, but likewiſe from the honours and emoluments of the firſt places in the colony, produces a humiliating

miliating ſenſe of ſubordination, and gradually eſtranges his mind from an allegiance to the parent ſtate. This evil, however, neceſſarily ariſes from his inferior circumſtances, and from the ſovereign's ignorance of thoſe individuals in the colony, into whoſe hands power and confidence might be ſafely intruſted. Beſides, a turn of mind peculiar to the planter, occaſioned by a phyſical difference of conſtitution, climate, cuſtoms, and education, tends ſtill more to repreſs the remains of his former attachment to his native ſoil. Whoever has attended to the ſtriking peculiarities which often ſubſiſt between the inhabitants of different provinces, cities, and even villages of the ſame kingdom, will eaſily conceive the powerful influence of this principle. Now if, in the courſe of human affairs, any critical ſituation in the circumſtances of the mother country ſhould happen to concur with this jealous and irritated temper of the colonies, it is likely to be embraced by certain popular leaders, as the proper moment for revolt; while pride, luxury, and the love of innovation, actuating the minds of all orders of men, may ſuggeſt

ſuggeſt claims to independence, and prompt men finally to withdraw that allegiance which they have learned to conſider as a foreign yoke.

Colonial depravity ſeems to be leſs incident to an iſland than to a more extended territory; and therefore I would recommend an inſular in preference to a continental ſituation, for the purpoſe of diſtant ſettlements. Exorbitant fortunes, which always produce great inequality in men, are almoſt peculiar to an extenſive country, and ſeldom fall to the ſhare of individuals reſiding within the moderate bounds of an iſland; beſides, the more difficult intercourſe which ſubſiſts between two iſlands, will render their union more incomplete than that between two provinces on the ſame continent. Each iſland will acquire a character peculiar to itſelf, and adverſe from an intimate coalition with a neighbour; whilſt ſameneſs of ſituation, leading to ſimilar purſuits, may be expected to create in the minds of their reſpective inhabitants the jealouſy and antipathy of rival ſtates.

I was at ſome pains to conſider the preſent ſtate of our Antilles iſlands; and I am ſatiſfied, from every thing I was able to obſerve, that citizens, according to their reſpective character, education, and circumſtances, ſhould be made to fill the hard and laborious as well as the more eaſy and reſpectable departments of the colony. This is the arrangement of nature, and ariſes from the ordinary progreſs of human ſociety—an arrangement, however, which was checked in our weſtern iſlands by the early introduction of a ſyſtem of ſlavery, which, for moral turpitude, has no example in the hiſtory of mankind. The European no ſooner arrives in the colony than he conceives himſelf a man of rank, and would bluſh to exerciſe the ſame manual occupation he uſed to practiſe at home. He joins his countrymen, not to work, but to indulge; and hence the poor negro is ſaddled not only with that labour intended for his maſter, but likewiſe with what properly belongs to inferior animals. It therefore follows, that while the lazy breed of white men increaſes, the uſeful and laborious blacks are daily on the decline.

The

The planter's diminiſhed ſtock muſt be recruited by freſh importations of ſlaves; and thus, by their rapid and unnatural conſumption, the regions from which they are obtained muſt be gradually reduced to deſolation. The cruel effects of this inhuman traffic are already felt in the thin population of theſe ſable tribes; and, from the art and chicane which the African dealer learns from the European merchant, advance in the price of negroes may be expected to bear no proportion to their actual ſcarcity.

In a country where the beauty of climate is only equalled by a fertility of ſoil, the race of Europeans degenerates as it increaſes; and, after depriving the colony of uſeful labourers by exceſſive toil and ſeverity, many remain a burden upon the ſettlement, or fall a ſacrifice to idleneſs, extravagance, and ſenſuality. How different from theſe colonies, in population and manners, are the provinces of Canada and Louiſiana! In the latter, though with a more ſtubborn ſoil, the planter is not degraded in his own eſtimation, nor in that of others, by cultivating his farm with his own hands. His conſtitution is

not

not impaired by the indulgence of idleneſs and intemperance, nor does the improvement of his fields depend on the hard toil of a reluctant ſlave, who has no better proſpect than that of ending his days amidſt the rigours of labour and puniſhment. Reſpecting what is obſerved of the heat and pernicious influence of climate on the European conſtitution, I conceive it to be merely an apology for pride and indolence; for it is evident, that the fibres of the negro, born under the vertical rays of the ſun, muſt be much more relaxed, and therefore leſs in a condition for labour and exerciſe, than thoſe of the European who comes from a more temperate region. In ſhort, I have had occaſion to remark, that ignorance and indifference on the part of the mother country, regarding the government of her colonies, frequently engender inſolence and rapacity in certain individuals, whoſe conduct tends to ſubvert the commerce, and ſhake the ſtability of her foreign ſettlements.——I return to the Phillippine iſlands.

The

The Engliſh, with a vigilance peculiar to themſelves in matters relating to commerce, perceiving the importance of an eſtabliſhment in theſe iſlands, when Manilla, by the articles of peace, was reſtored to the Spaniards, formed an alliance with the king of Holo, and eſtabliſhed a colony in his dominions. Their ſhips, which have occaſion to proceed to China late in the ſeaſon, are obliged to ſail through the Phillippine Archipelago; and, therefore, they have been at infinite pains to acquire an accurate knowledge of this navigation, a navigation which in time of war affords acceſs to the Indian ocean, introduces them to a commerce with the whole of theſe iſlands at preſent in the hands of the Chineſe, favours their illicit trade with the Dutch ſettlements and the Molucca iſles, and may, on ſome future occaſion, facilitate the conqueſt of one or more of thoſe countries, whether Indian, Spaniſh, or Dutch.

If the reader is inclined to regard theſe obſervations as idle and extravagant, let him reflect for a moment on the active and aſpiring genius of the Engliſh, and he will find,

find, that among them the moſt inſignificant of the people is frequently actuated by all the zeal and enterprize of a patriotic citizen; that his ſpeculations on the great intereſts of his country are not treated with contempt merely becauſe they come from an obſcure individual; that, ſince theſe diſtant regions are rarely viſited but by men of inferior condition, who emigrate for the improvement of their fortune, the miniſter of that enlightened country is ſenſible he can derive ſuch information from perſons of this deſcription only; that the exact bearing of a cape, poſition of a channel, mountain, or harbour, diſcoveries of little moment at firſt view, may be found by men of their character, ardent to have a permanent ſettlement in that part of the world, of eſſential importance. In a word, let him recollect, that theſe are actually the means by which the Engliſh have been enabled to complete their conqueſts in America, to acquire a moſt extenſive dominion in India, and to open to themſelves different avenues to the capital of Mexico.

The

The preſent commerce of Manilla, excluſive of a coaſting trade with the Biſſayan iſles, is confined to one or two ſhips, employed to purchaſe goods at Macao, and five or ſix Chineſe veſſels, which import commodities from Canton and Quemoy. They diſpatch, but rarely, a ſingle ſhip to Siam, Bengal, or the coaſt of Coromandel; and, beſides the galleon of New Spain, loaded with the produce of China and Bengal, they ſend one to Batavia, whence they are ſupplied with the goods and manufactures of Europe. As there was no ſhip to ſail from Manilla ſooner than that bound for Batavia towards the beginning of March, I choſe to embrace this opportunity of continuing my travels.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Departure from Manilla for Batavia—Anchorage in Batavia Road—useful Cautions to Navigators—the Dutch hold their India Settlements by a precarious Tenure—Description of Batavia and its Environs.

I ACCORDINGLY sailed from Manilla for Batavia, the 7th of March 1769, in a small Spanish vessel, with a fair wind at east. We passed the Marybelles and the point of Caponnes on our left, and soon came in view of the islands Luban and Mindoro; but being unable to discover the island Paragoa, we were not without apprehension of running on some sand-banks situated northward from the soundings of Pulo Saputo. We entered the sound of this little island, with from thirty to forty fathoms water, on a bottom of sand mixed with shells, and discovered Pulo Saputo, which is a rock in the perfect form of a shoe. North of it, at the distance of three leagues, is a cluster of other little islands, or rather rocks, which

which are eſteemed ſomewhat dangerous in this navigation. The wind, which had greatly abated as we turned Pulo Saputo, began to freſhen; and having no confidence in the S. E. at this ſeaſon, it being now the 20th of March, we ſtood out to ſea from the mouth of the gulph of Siam, and ſoon diſcovered the iſlands Anambas and Natuna. We ſaw Pulo Aor, and afterwards the iſles of Saint Eſprit. Between Saint Eſprit and the iſlands that form the entrance to the ſtraits of Malacca, we had very little depth of water, our ſoundings being only eight fathoms on a muddy bottom. We had made but little progreſs when we were admoniſhed by violent ſqualls of our approach to the iſland *Sumatra*; and ſoon diſcovered the mountains of Monopin, north of the iſland of Banca. Here we ſtood away towards Sumatra, and ſteered along the coaſt, keeping clear of the ſhore, as well as of the point of Banca. As we paſſed the mouth of the Palimban, a river in Sumatra, we ſaw a Dutch veſſel taking in a cargo of pepper. We entered the ſtraits and ſailed along the ſhore in only ſix fathoms water. The ſea running

running extremely high, with little wind, we were desirous of coming to anchor; but finding we had occasion for a supply of fresh water, we passed the straits, and moored in five fathoms, a stone's throw from the islands of Nanca. This, however, being a critical situation for small vessels such as ours, by reason of the Malay pirates who infest the straits, we made all possible dispatch to get again under weigh; and the next day, having doubled Nort-water, we had a distant view of the island Java. We were now surrounded with a thousand small islands, in a current which ran with great impetuosity, and we thought it advisable to bring to and drop an anchor. We again got under sail with more favourable weather, and doubling Sud-water and the isle of Edam, we moored the 15th of April in the road of Batavia. The flag-staff of a Dutch fort, erected on this little island, appeared over the tops of the trees: this, with a number of labourers, were the first objects that caught our notice. The approach to the isle of Edam from the S. E. is greatly incom-

incommoded by a reef of rocks, to avoid which requires much caution in the pilot.

The road of Batavia is large, handſome, and ſecure, but preſenting two objects of danger, which ought to be deſcribed for the benefit of navigators. The firſt, lying in the E. and in the way of the ordinary ſtation of ſhipping in the road, we left on our larboard at a conſiderable diſtance. The ſecond is equally diſtant, on the ſide of the main from the ſhip's ſtation, which is a good quarter of a league from land, and oppoſite to the canal of Batavia. The former is diſtinguiſhed by ſeveral croſſes erected for the purpoſe of beacons; and, as the veſſels which have buſineſs in the Archipelago or the Molucca iſles have no temptation to approach ſo near the land, is of little conſequence. But the latter may eaſily interfere with ſuch ſhips on a tack as have occaſion to touch at the iſland Honduras, or on the coaſt of the main land, near the ſtraits of the Sound. This is pointed out to the mariner's notice by a pole, on the top of which is a triangular frame.

The road is formed, on the ſide of the land, by a vaſt curvature of the coaſt, in the manner of an amphitheatre, whoſe extremities project conſiderably into the ſea, and on that of the ocean by a number of little iſlands, on which the Dutch have erected arſenals, magazines, and work-houſes. At Honduras we had the firſt ſtriking example of Dutch induſtry, conſiſting of windmills conſtructed for the purpoſe of ſawing timber.

I proceeded directly to Batavia, which is ſituated about half a league from the ſhore, and at the head of a very beautiful canal, in excellent repair, and capable of admitting veſſels of four hundred tons burthen. The city is extremely populous, has a handſome caſtle, and the garriſon, as well as the other inhabitants, conſiſts chiefly of Europeans. Though regularly, it is *weakly* fortified; but, by means of canals and avenues of large trees, which occupy and interſect the adjacent grounds, and which might be eaſily converted into an infinite number of intrenchments, it ſeems to me capable of being put into a very ſtrong ſtate of defence.

From

From all I could learn during four months ſpent in Batavia and its environs, the ſettlements of the Dutch in India ſeem to be held by a much more precarious tenure than than thoſe of their neighbours the Spaniards in the Phillippine iſles. Since the firſt ſettlement of the Dutch in this part of the world, they have taken no pains to incorporate the natives with their own ſubjects; on the contrary, their conduct and deportment towards the Indians have been ſuch, as to render the latter highly indignant, and impatient of their government. The Hollanders are neither inſenſible to the diſaffection of the Indians, nor to the advantages of their trade; and hence that chequered policy, in which they employ alternately force, flattery, and diſſimulation, as may ſeem moſt conducive to their preſent views. They are engaged in frequent wars with the Indians, and in perpetual dread of hoſtilities, even from thoſe who live in the neighbourhood of Batavia; and, were any diſaſtrous event to happen in the affairs of the commonwealth to divert a ſtrict attention to their colonies in the Eaſt, we might ſoon ſee the

reign of theſe republicans finally terminate in thoſe regions. This is what may be called the want of colonial ſtability, a defect partly owing to the Indians never having been brought to conform in matters of religion; but much more to that commercial avarice and rapacity which have frequently engaged the Dutch in meaſures ſo ſcandalouſly baſe and ſanguinary, as could not fail to excite in the breaſts of the natives ſentiments of the moſt implacable hatred to their perſons and intereſts.

The Dutch ſettlement in the iſland of Java preſents a large field for diſcuſſion; but I ſhall ſay little here of what I have either ſeen or have ſufficient reaſon to believe. The great reſort of ſtrangers, Europeans as well as Aſiatics, to this road; the vaſt commerce of the Dutch, to which Batavia ſerves as the principal mart; the unaffected beauty of the capital; its canals, walks, and gardens; the regularity of the Batavian houſes; the number, and ſumptuous manners of the Dutch merchants; the immenſe population of Indians, Moors, Chineſe, and Portugueſe; their numerous families of ſlaves; the re-

ſources

ſources requiſite to maintain and carry on ſo extenſive and various a commerce; the force of their arms, which are in condition to controul and govern many warlike and potent princes; in a word, all the chief objects of inquiry relative to the actual ſtate of this country have been fully conſidered by preceding travellers.

I found much entertainment in rambling about the ſtreets of Batavia, each of which preſents the gay and pleaſant effect of a beautiful promenade. On either ſide is a regular row of houſes, veneered with a kind of teſſellated bricks. Along the walls of each houſe, and two or three ſteps above the level of the ground, runs a terrace, which is ſeparated from that of the adjoining building by benches, and covered with tents or booths for the accommodation of the proprietor and his friends. Beneath this terrace is a ſpace of ſix or ſeven feet in width, paved with flag-ſtones, which forms a path for the convenience of foot-paſſengers. Contiguous to the path is a much larger ſpace, covered with fine ſand and gravel, intended for the uſe of carriages; and, laſt of all, appears a row of

bushy evergreens, cut into the form of a fan, which lines each side of a canal of running water, about thirty yards in breadth. Under the shade of these trees is another little terrace, neatly paved, and rising by a flight of steps above the level of the street. The canal is confined by walls, with stairs at certain intervals, for the purposes of navigation; and on the opposite side is a street in exact uniformity with that which has now been described.

The castle is one of the most beautiful objects I have ever seen; and from the uniform and chaste simplicity observed in the military as well as rural disposition of the adjacent grounds, does great honour to the artist. The suburbs of Batavia are divided into three districts, and separated from one another by large intervals, which are occupied by gardens laid out in good taste.

The first district is composed of Portuguese heretics, and Indians from Bengal or the Malabar coast. Their streets and houses are in the stile of the Dutch, but on a smaller scale.

The

The ſecond, conſiderably larger and more populous than the former, is the chief reſidence of the Chineſe, who, by their unwearied buſtle in the ſtreets, and application to the buſineſs of their ſhops, afford a ſtriking picture of the active and induſtrious genius of this extraordinary people. Their houſes, except thoſe of the richer ſort which have an elegant ſimplicity, are miſerably built; they are low, the apartments wretchedly contrived, and, from their great population, ſtrangely crowded together. Their ſtreets, extremely narrow and naſty, are beſides much incumbered with a curious aſſemblage of all the various articles of Chineſe induſtry and manufacture.

The third conſiſts of Indians, collected from the different iſlands of the vaſt archipelago, as well as from the various parts of the eaſtern continent. This diſtrict is more extenſive and rural, but much leſs populous than either of the former. The houſes and gardens of the richer Moors from the peninſula of India, are in the Aſiatic taſte, and not inferior in beauty to thoſe of the moſt opulent among the Dutch; but the houſes of

the poorer ſort are extremely ſimple. The Indian ever chuſing to reſide in the vicinity of running water, of which he makes frequent uſe for ablution and other religious obſervances, commonly rears his cottage between two trees on the bank of a canal. It is very remarkable, that, though ſprung from countries widely different from one another, a few trifling differences excepted, they all obſerve the ſame rites, manners, and cuſtoms. Many are rude and uncultivated, but they are generally fair in their dealings, ſimple and unaffected in their dreſs, ſober and temperate in their diet. They ſubſiſt almoſt entirely on rice and fruit; and uſe the looſe flowing garments of the eaſtern nations. The Indian from the archipelago wears a kind of petticoat deſcending to the calf of the leg, a waiſtcoat widening as it approaches the hips, and over all a ſaſh or plaid, which anſwers the purpoſe of a ſurtout coat, and occaſionally ſerves to defend his perſon from the inclemencies of the ſeaſon. In fine weather this is worn like a large ſhoulder-belt, and is eſteemed an ornamental as well as uſeful article of dreſs. The ſurtout, or

great

great coat, is common to both ſexes, whoſe apparel is in all reſpects ſimilar, except that the waiſtcoat and petticoat of the women are generally black, and made to deſcend lower than thoſe of the men. The head of the woman is always uncovered, with the hair rolled or platted on the crown, in the manner of the Chineſe. The men wear hats, made ſometimes of leaves, and large and flat, which have a ſtrong reſemblance to thoſe I firſt ſaw in the Phillippine iſles. Others wear hats made of fine leaves, reſembling in their form a ſmall kettle.

The intervals between the different diſtricts of ſuburbs preſent to the eye Dutch gardens beautifully interſected by canals, and embelliſhed with artificial iſlands and rocks, in the ſame ſimple taſte with their houſes. The houſes of the Dutch are large, handſome, and convenient; though they ſeldom occupy more during the day-time than two galleries in oppoſite fronts. The firſt, which is uſed as a drawing-room, is elegant, comfortably furniſhed, and made to admit a free circulation of air—a circumſtance of great convenience in allaying the intenſe

intenſe heat of the climate. One end of the ſecond gallery is appropriated to the maſter's private accommodation, for here he has his counting-houſe, clerks, books, and papers. The other is the apartment of the wife, who, amidſt her domeſtic concerns, her children, women, and ſlaves, ſuperintends the induſtry and œconomy of her family. The gardens of the Dutch merchants extend to the diſtance of a league and a half from Batavia, on each ſide of magnificent canals, lined with fine trees, which afford a cooling and perpetual ſhade. Here I ſaw the baſons or reſervoirs of ſeveral rivers, which furniſh plentiful ſupplies of water over all the adjacent country, though by far the greateſt part of it is diverted into the canals of Batavia.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

Cuſtoms of the Javaneſe and Malayans—Deſcription of ſeveral Chineſe Temples on the Iſland of Java—religious and civil Rites of the Chineſe—ruinous Policy of the Dutch in their Management of this Settlement.

I SPENT my time very agreeably in this iſland, partly in the city, but more frequently in one of the gardens which I have now deſcribed. At Batavia I ſaw the Chineſe as well as the European comedy, and a ſpecies of Javaneſe opera, accompanied with dancing. There was a novelty in the natural and ſimple muſic of theſe countries, from which I derived much entertainment. The ceremonies attending the Javeneſe manner of burial are extremely intereſting to a mind endued with ſenſibility. The mourner's plaintive lamentation, the tears and ſorrow of relations, the profuſion of flowers and odours ſcattered over the body of the deceaſed, are emblems of that ſweet and tender affection which

which ſubſiſted between the living and their departed friends.

In the vaſt concourſe of different nations from the old continent one perceives a diſtinctive phyſiognomy and character, which are lively or ſerious, according as the reſpective places of their nativity are more or leſs removed from the regions under the line—a diverſity which ſeems at the ſame time to receive certain modifications from the nature of the ſoil and the quality of diet. Experience has very much confirmed me in the truth of this remark; though I confeſs I have obſerved in ſome inſtances, with ſurprize, a ſtronger analogy between two people on the ſame continent, but widely diſtant from each other, than between two nations almoſt contiguous, the one of which is in Aſia and the other in Europe. This appearance might perhaps be beſt explained by recurring to the original ſources of their reſpective population.

The Chineſe temples, which ſtand without the walls of Batavia, are in the ſame good taſte obſervable in their private buildings: they are adorned with the ſtatues of Chineſe

Chineſe heroes and patriots, who, after rendering ſervices to their country during their lives, are now remembered by poſterity with gratitude and veneration. Before each ſtatue is an altar, in honour of which tapers are kept burning day and night; and at ſtated periods it is the buſineſs of the prieſt to offer ſacrifice, the nature or purpoſes of which I could not learn. The miniſter, however, appears in the evening before the altar, and, having prayed and beat a drum, proceeds to burn bits of paper painted with various deſigns; and probably in this manner preſents gifts to the object of his religious worſhip. At a certain age of the moon theſe temples are magnificently illuminated with lamps and flambeaux; and indeed the greateſt part of the Chineſe rites ſeem to be exerciſed in the myſterious uſe of light and ſound. Fire, I am told, is the ſymbol of that fervent love which ought to inflame their minds in the offices of devotion; while ſound, ſerves to denote their earneſt and importunate deſire of being liſtened to in their prayers. I am much inclined to reſt ſatisfied with this commentary on the religious rites of the Chi-

neſe, as there appears an evident analogy between this religious noiſe and the uſe of the great drum which ſtood anciently at the door of the hall of the emperor of China's palace. In former times every Chineſe ſubject had the privilege of beating it as often as he wiſhed to have an audience of the emperor; and it is ſaid that his Majeſty was never known to refuſe acceſs to his preſence the moment he heard the ſound of the great drum.

When a Chineſe virgin has attained an age proper for hymeneal rites, ſhe intimates her deſire of an alliance with the other ſex, by placing a ſet of flower-pots in the windows of her apartments. Marriage is contracted without the intervention of the flighteſt acquaintance between the parties; and the wife of a rich Aſiatic would conceive it to be a profanation of her perſon, to be ſeen without the walls of the haram.

The Javaneſe are tall and well-proportioned in their limbs, and preſent themſelves with a nobler air and more open countenance than the natives of the Phillippine iſles. The Malaye Indians, on the other hand, are

ſhort

ſhort and clumſy in their perſons, with ſomething extremely coarſe and ruſtic in the eyes and general expreſſion of the face. As to the manners, however, of the Javaneſe, I am greatly at a loſs; for, having lodged in the houſe of an European, I had but little occaſion to frequent their company.

Many complaints are made of the unwholeſome nature both of the air and water at Batavia. For my part, though I drank nothing but pure water, and fed on fruit and vegetables alone, I never enjoyed, in any period of my life, better health than on the iſland of Java. This meagre diet, however, is very different from the manner of living in uſe among Europeans at Batavia; but I found it to be the food of the Indians, and it was much better ſuited to my natural taſte, and to all the ſober and temperate maxims of my life. Beſides many ſpecies of fruits and vegetables peculiar to theſe climates, I met with every production of the European garden in great abundance. The regiſter-ſhip, which ſails annually in the month of March, being

on

on the point of her departure, I ſeized this opportunity to write to my friends in Europe.

The moſt ruinous policy, in my opinion, which can here actuate a company of merchants, is that of interfering in the numberleſs feuds and animoſities of the Indian princes; and hence I maintain, that the poſſeſſions of the Spaniards in the Phillippine iſles reſt on a ſurer foundation than thoſe either of the Engliſh or Dutch in the Eaſt Indies. The Dutch were no ſooner ſettled on the iſland of Java, than, inſtead of remaining like good and peaceable merchants behind their counters, they uniformly made it their buſineſs to mingle in all the antipathies and diſputes of the natives. Conſtantly at war with one prince or another, perhaps to their misfortune they have been almoſt as conſtantly ſucceſsful. A war, however, once kindled in theſe regions, like a kind of hydra, ſeldom expires without giving birth to many ſucceeding ones. I found, upon my arrival at Batavia, that they had juſt concluded two; one at Malacca, and the

the other in the Molucca iſles; a third in the eaſt of Java, was then upon their hands; and they were buſily preparing for a fourth in Sumatra, againſt the king of Palimban.

CHAP. XXX.

Military and civil Eſtabliſhments of the Dutch in the Iſland of Java—their political Management in ſubjecting the native Princes—the Conduct of the Spaniards and Dutch, in the Adminiſtration of their diſtant Settlements, conſidered and compared—the Author takes his Paſſage in an Engliſh Veſſel for Bombay.

THE Dutch company, under the pretext of doing honour to the emperor of Java, but in fact with a view to their own ſecurity only, maintain two companies of European cavalry in his ſervice. Every avenue leading to the city is lined with a chain of forts; and though Batavia is defended by a numerous garriſon, beſides a ſtrong body of

Europeans, divine ſervice and the execution of criminals are always performed with ſhut gates.

The Indian kings in alliance with the Dutch are crowned by the council of Batavia; and when at any time the right of ſucceſſion happens to be diſputed, the claims of that pretender moſt in the Company's intereſt are invariably ſuſtained, and, by force or artifice, he is certain to ſucceed to the throne.

It is a maxim of policy with the Dutch, to ſuit themſelves to the natural conceit and vanity of theſe eaſtern princes, and to flatter them with much outward ſhew of regal grandeur, but at the ſame time to ſtrip them of all real conſequence. Thus, provided the Dutch can get poſſeſſion of the ſubſtance, the Indian may amuſe himſelf with the ſhadow of Majeſty. The king of Palimban having by ſome means given umbrage to the council of Batavia, I ſaw his miniſter arrive, inſtructed to make every apology in his maſter's name; and his reception was ſuch as became the repreſentative of a great monarch. It is the duty of

the youngeſt in the court of *elders* to introduce ſtrangers to an audience of the Company, and therefore the *chabandar*, as he is called, attended by a numerous retinue, went to compliment him on his arrival. He was received with great ceremony, and his credentials being delivered to the chabandar under the diſcharge of artillery, were placed on a cuſhion ſupported by a large ſilver vaſe, which was carried by a company's officer. The proceſſion getting into motion, the embaſſador, eſcorted by a detachment of the company's troops, was conducted to the caſtle; where, being introduced to the council, the peruſal of his inſtructions began and ended with a diſcharge of cannon and muſketry. The embaſſador withdrew, and the council of elders broke up.

The rank of counſellor, but above all the high office of preſident, is inveſted with much honour and diſtinction. The coach of the latter is conſtantly attended by a body of cavalry, and preceded by a company of trumpeters, who announce the perſon of his excellency to the public. At his approach, carriages of all denominations ſtop,

and thoſe who are within alight, and pay him homage as he paſſes. The honour of having two running footmen, a band of muſic, and a train of coaches, is peculiar to the members of council; and carriages muſt ſtop and give way to them as to the governor general, but, inſtead of alighting, it is only required that thoſe within ſhall riſe from their places.

The higher claſs of merchants, who take precedence immediately after members of council, have the excluſive privilege of riding in gilt coaches. Carriages at Batavia are ſubjected to a very heavy impoſition; but it is remarkable that the quantity of this tax is the *inverſe ratio* of the ſubject's rank; inſomuch that while a member of council pays a mere trifle, the inferior orders of men are made to contribute a great deal. If it is in the policy of this regulation to diſcourage carriages as a luxury, I have no objection to it; but I was not a little ſurprized to find, in the colony of a republic, and in a company of merchants, more etiquette and oſtentation of ſuperior rank than we uſually meet with in the firſt claſs of European nobility.

The

The Spaniards live in the quiet and undiſturbed poſſeſſion of their iſlands, and having in general nothing to dread from their own people, have leiſure to turn their arms againſt the hoſtile deſigns of a foreign enemy; and yet the ſubjects of Spain in thoſe parts, making allowance for the difference in extent of territory, are much more numerous than thoſe of the allied kings, or rather tributaries of the Dutch.

The conſequence attached to the perſon of a Spaniard in a public office is chiefly conferred upon him as a repreſentative of the parent ſtate; and it is not very conſiderable, either with reſpect to power or honour: his perſonal conduct and character form his beſt recommendation to reſpect and eſteem. An alcade, without the aſſiſtance of a ſingle bayonet, rules over ten thouſand Indians, who diſlike him, it is true, as much as the natives of Java can hate the Dutch; but ſtill they remain in unſhaken allegiance to the Spaniards, a problem which can only be explained by the ſameneſs of religion which ſubſiſts between the Phillippine iſles and the mother country; but more eſpecially, I ſuſ-

pect, from the influence of the monks or parochial clergy, who have greater influence in maintaining good order among the natives than even the terror of an armed force.

The conduct of the Dutch in the administration of their distant settlements is at least equally exceptionable with that of the Spaniards. The miserable state of the natives who have the misfortune to live immediately under their authority, and their inhuman massacre of Indians and Chinese for venturing to oppose the torrent of Batavian oppression, are striking examples of the tyrannical maxims which actuate the tools of this mercantile government. During my short residence at Batavia the Dutch beheaded one Indian, and impaled another with circumstances of such savage barbarity, as I believe are scarcely to be paralleled in the annals of Turkey. The last unhappy man remained six days alive upon the stake, and was permitted, among those who call themselves Christians, to expire at last in the wind and rain under all the agony of his wounds. A prince from the Phillippine Archipelago had

had been condemned to perpetual impriſonment, and was then living in a cell immediately over the gate of the caſtle; while an Indian of the ſame rank, from the iſland of Ceylon, was juſt ſentenced to a ſimilar puniſhment.

I do not mean, however, to defend the policy of the Spaniards, or to ſay that in the records of their government abroad one cannot find ſimilar inſtances of barbarity and oppreſſion. Their cruel perſecution of the innocent natives of Mexico, with the preſent mean and indigent ſtate of Montezuma's deſcendants, while they wound the feelings of humanity, carry down to lateſt generations an indelible ſtain in the page of hiſtory. The calamitous fate of the Datou's ſucceſſors in the Phillippine iſles, and that horrid ſlaughter of Indians and Chineſe, which enſued upon their unhappy revolt, are farther examples of the ſame brutal and unrelenting policy. But one of the moſt extraordinary inſtances of colonial vexation, whether under the Dutch, Engliſh, or Spaniards, is that of a young Indian prince,

who, being forced into exile by the violence of his enemies, expected compaſſion under his misfortunes within the walls of Manilla: he had large poſſeſſions in Mindanao and Borneo, was king of Holo and ſeveral other adjacent iſlands. Compelled, however, to take the field againſt his uncle, in defence of his juſt rights, he was defeated in battle, and withdrew to Luconia, hoping to receive ſuccours from the generoſity of the Spaniards. He arrived at Manilla with great riches; and delivered to the governor, as a preſent for the king of Spain, two curious pearls of ſurprizing ſize and elegance. He had been educated in the religion of Mahomet; but, with a view to ingratiate himſelf into the favour of his new allies, after diſmiſſing his wives, embraced Chriſtianity, and was admitted to baptiſm. In ſpite, however, of every compliance on his part, his neareſt relations were ſubjected in his preſence to the indignity of the whip, and reduced to the meaneſt condition of ſlavery; while the unfortunate prince himſelf, ſtripped of his property,

property, and overwhelmed by all the misery of poverty and despair, was confined to a dungeon. There he remained, bereaved of every earthly comfort, till the arrival of the English at the gates of Manilla, who opened the doors of his prison, and restored him to his subjects.

I cannot, however, believe, that such instances of perfidy and injustice in the Spanish colonies are countenanced by the parent state. The instructions of the court of Spain to her delegates in these islands have always been favourable to the happiness of the Indians; and hence the regulation above-mentioned for the encouragement of marriage between their own subjects and the natives, undoubtedly one of the best institutions that can be imagined for establishing a national colony. To this cause is chiefly to be attributed the decline of national arrogance among the Spaniards, as well as the great increase of Indian subjects, who consider themselves in all respects as citizens of the same state. But, until the Dutch condescend to imitate, particularly

ticularly in this inſtance, the wiſer policy of Spain, their ſettlements in the Eaſt Indies can only be regarded as precarious boards of trade, eſtabliſhed in diſtant and diſaffected countries.

I have not troubled the reader with any account of the animal and vegetable productions in the neighbourhood of Batavia, becauſe, from the conſtant reſort of European nations to this iſland, they muſt before this time be ſufficiently known to the public; I ſhall therefore but briefly mention, that one night I met with an animal, which appeared to me of an extraordinary ſpecies: it had extremely ſhort legs, toes, and claws, a long tail, a ſnout drawing to a point, a lively eye, and an aſpect peculiarly mild and placid; being covered with a coat of ſcales, each at leaſt an inch in diameter, I took it for the armadilla. I happened to be in company with a Swiſs officer, who, as it was found croſſing the ſtreet from the ſide of the canal, miſtaking it for a cayman, gave it a ſtroke with his couteau-de-chaſſe, but, owing to the reſiſtance of the ſcales, it ſeemed to receive no manner of injury; not doubting

doubting that it was an animal of a noxious ſpecies, I thruſt at it with my ſmall ſword, and pierced its body under the mail. The creature feeling itſelf wounded, inſtantly aſſumed the form of a bowl, and perceiving a ſlope in the ground, rolled with ſurprizing velocity inſtinctively towards the water. Having ſhoved him to the top of the bank, he was ſeized, and carried ſuſpended by the tail to my lodgings; here he ſurvived his misfortunes only ſeven or eight days, in the courſe of which he became ſomewhat familiar, ſhewed an inclination to make himſelf a hole in the floor, and was almoſt conſtantly covered with ants. Whether theſe inſects were attracted by any particular quality in his nature, or merely by the effluvia of his wounds, I cannot ſay; but to the beſt of my obſervation, he ſeemed to eat them. When at any time he caught my eye directed towards him, he preſently collected his head and feet under his back and tail, and became a gobular maſs of ſcales. He is named, as I have been told, in the Portugueſe language, *biſhou bergougnoſou*, or the little bluſhing animal.

Intend-

Intending to viſit Bombay, the only ſafe, commodious, and ſtrongly fortified harbour on the main land of India, I took my paſſage in an Engliſh veſſel bound to Surat, but which, for commercial reaſons, was to touch at that port.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.